

A Body of Divinity

Thomas Watson

Chapter 1: A Preliminary Discourse on Catechizing	9
Proof text: [Colossians 1.23]	
It is the duty of Christians to be settled in the doctrine of faith	
The way for Christians to be settled is to be well grounded	
Uses of propositions	
Part 1: Introduction	
Chapter 2: Man's Chief End	11
The Glorifying of God	
The Enjoying of God	
Chapter 3: The Scriptures are the rule that God gave to direct us how we may glorify and enjoy Him	19
Not only the rule but also the only rule	
How does it appear that the Scriptures have a divine authority stamped upon them?	
Use 1: See the wonderful goodness of God, who, has committed to us the sacred Scriptures	
Use 2: Is all Scripture of divine inspiration?	
Use 3: If the Scripture is of divine inspiration, then be exhorted	
Part 2: God and His Creation	
Chapter 4: The Being of God	24
What do the Scriptures principally teach?	
What is God?	
Chapter 5: The Knowledge of God	32
The God of Knowledge	
Characteristics of God's knowledge	
Use 1: Is God infinite in knowledge? Is He light and in Him is no darkness?	
Use 2: If God were a God of knowledge, then see the folly of hypocrisy	
Use 3: Is God so infinite in knowledge? Then we should always feel as under His omniscient eye	
Use 4: Is God's knowledge infinite? Study sincerity, be what you seem	
Use 5: Is God a God of infinite knowledge? Then there is comfort	
Chapter 6: The Eternity of God	35
Proof text: [Psalm 90.2]	
A Threefold Being	
God's names and titles linked to His eternity	
Use 1: Thunder and lightning to the wicked. God is eternal; therefore the torments are eternal	
Use 2: Of comfort to the godly. God is eternal, therefore He lives forever to reward the godly.	
Use 3: Of exhortation. Study eternity	
Chapter 7: The Unchangeableness of God	37
God is unchangeable in His nature	
God is unchangeable in His decree	
Chapter 8: The Wisdom of God	40
One of the brightest beams of the Godhead	
God's wisdom seen	
Use 1: Adore and rest in the wisdom of God	
Use 2: If God be infinitely wise, let us go to Him for wisdom	

<u>Chapter 9: The Power of God</u>	42
El-shaddai - God Almighty	
God has both authority and power	
Use 1: If God is infinite in power, let us fear Him	
Use 2: See the deplorable condition of wicked men	
Use 3: It reproves such as do not believe the power of God	
Use 4: If God be infinite in power, let us take heed of hardening our hearts against Him	
Use 5: Get an interest in God, and then this glorious power is engaged for you	
<u>Chapter 10: The Holiness of God</u>	46
Proof texts: [Exodus 15.11]; [Psalm 111.9]; [Job 6.10]; [Isaiah 6.3]; [Habakkuk 1.13]	
God is holy intrinsically	
God is holy primarily	
God is holy efficiently	
God is holy transcendentally	
But is He not privy to all of the sins of men? How can He behold their impurities, and not be defiled?	
Use 1: Is God so infinitely holy? Then see how unlike to God sin is	
Use 2: Is God the Holy One, and is holiness His glory? How impious are they that are haters of holiness!	
Use 3: Is God so infinitely holy? Then let us endeavor to imitate God	
<u>Chapter 11: The Justice of God</u>	49
Proof texts: [Deuteronomy 32.4]; [Job 37.23]; [Psalm 89.14]	
What is God's justice?	
God's justice runs in two channels	
Use 1: See here another flower of God's crown. He is just and righteous, the exemplar and pattern of justice	
Use 2: See the difference between God and a great part of the world	
Use 3: Imitate God in justice	
Use 4: If God be just, there will be a day of judgment	
Comfort to the true penitent	
<u>Chapter 12: The Mercy of God</u>	51
The result and effect of God's goodness.	
Twelve positions concerning God's mercy	
The qualifications or properties of God's mercy	
Use 1: Look upon God in prayer, not in His judgment robes, but clothed with mercy and clemency.	
Use 2: Believe in His mercy	
Use 3: Take heed of abusing the mercy of God	
What shall we do to be interested in God's mercy?	
Use 4: Such as have found mercy are exhorted to three things	
<u>Chapter 13: The Truth of God</u>	55
Proof texts: [Deuteronomy 32.4]; [Psalm 57.10]; [Psalm 86.15]	
God is the truth	
God's truth as it is taken from His veracity in making good His promises	
<u>Chapter 14: The Unity of God</u>	57
Are there more Gods than one?	
There is but one God	
Use 1: Of Information	
Use 2: Of caution	
Use 3: Of reproof	
Use 4: Of exhortation	
Use 5: Of gratitude	

<u>Chapter 15: The Trinity</u>	60
How many persons are there in the Godhead?	
Of the Unity in Trinity	
Of the Trinity in Unity	
Use 1: For confutation	
Use 2: For exhortation	
<u>Chapter 16: The Creation</u>	63
What are the decrees of God	
What is the work of creation?	
Two considerations on creation	
Concerning man as God's creation	
Why did God make the world?	
Use 1: Did God create this world?	
Use 2: Of exhortation	
<u>Chapter 17: The Providence of God</u>	66
What are God's works of Providence?	
There is providence	
What is this providence?	
Propositions about God's providence	
Use 1: By exhortation	
Use 2: Comfort in respect of the church of God	
Use 3: Long for the time when the great mystery of God's providence shall be fully unfolded to us.	
Part 3: The Fall	
<u>Chapter 18: The Covenant of Works</u>	69
What special act of providence did God exercise towards man in the estate wherein he was created?	
Use 1: See the character of God and the condition of man	
Use 2: Let us labor by faith to get into the second covenant of grace	
<u>Chapter 19: Sin</u>	70
What is Sin?	
Use 1: See how deadly an evil sin is, and how strange is it that any one should love it	
Use 2: Do anything rather than sin	
Use 3: Is sin so great an evil? Then how thankful should you be to God, if He has taken away your sin	
<u>Chapter 20: Adam's Sin</u>	73
What was the sin whereby our first parents fell from the estate wherein they were created?	
The sin, by which they fell, was eating the forbidden fruit	
<u>Chapter 21: Original Sin</u>	75
Did all mankind fall in Adam's first transgression?	
If when Adam fell, all mankind fell with him; why, when one angle fell, did not all fall?	
How is Adam's sin made ours?	
In original sin there is something privative, and something positive.	
The nature of original sin	
But why does God leave original sin in us after regeneration? He could free us from it if He pleased	
Use 1: If original sin be propagated in us while we live here, it confutes the Libertines and Quakers	
Use 2: Let us lay to heart original sin, and be deeply humbled for it	
Use 3: Let the sense of this make us daily look up to heaven for help	
Use 4: Let original sin make us walk with continual jealousy and watchfulness over our hearts	

<u>Chapter 22: Man's misery by the fall</u>	78
What is the misery of that estate whereinto man fell?	
Part 4: The Covenant of Grace and its Mediator	
<u>Chapter 23: The Covenant of Grace</u>	80
Did God leave all mankind to perish in the estate of sin and misery?	
There is a new covenant ratified between God and the elect	
Use 1: Of information. See the goodness of God, to enter into covenant with us	
Use 2: Of trial. Whether we are in a covenant with God. There are three characters	
Use 3: Of exhortation. To such as are out of covenant, labor to get into covenant, and have God your God	
Use 4: Of comfort to such as can make out our covenant interest in God	
Use 5: Of direction. To show you how you should walk who have tasted a covenant-mercy	
<u>Chapter 24: Christ the Mediator of the Covenant</u>	84
Proof text: [Hebrews 12.24]	
The names and titles of Christ	
Two considerations of Christ as our mediator	
Use 1: Admire the glory of this Mediator; He is God-man, He is co-essentially glorious with the Father.	
Use 2: If Christ be God-man in one person, then look unto Jesus Christ alone for salvation	
Use 3: Is Jesus Christ God and man in one person? This, as it shows the dignity of believers	
Use 4: Admire the love of Christ our Mediator; that He humble Himself, and take our flesh, and redeem us	
<u>Chapter 25: Christ's Prophetic Office</u>	87
Proof text: [Deuteronomy 18.15]	
Christ's names as Prophet	
How does Christ teach?	
What are the lessons that Christ teaches?	
How does Christ's teaching differ from other teaching?	
Use 1: Of information	
Use 2: Labour to have Christ for your prophet	
Use 3. If you have been taught by Christ savingly, be thankful	
<u>Chapter 26: Christ's Priestly Office</u>	90
How does Christ execute the office of Priest?	
What are the parts of Christ's priestly office?	
Use 1: Of instruction	
Use 2: Of trial	
Use 3: Of exhortation	
Use 4: Of comfort to believers	
<u>Chapter 27: Christ's Kingly Office</u>	98
How does Christ execute the office of a King?	
How came Christ to be King?	
In what sense is Christ King?	
Use 1: It is no disparagement to serve Christ; He is a King, and no dishonor to be employed in His service	
Use 2: Is Christ King of kings? Let all these great ones take heed how they employ their power against Him	
Use 3: If Christ be a great king, submit to Him	
Use 4: Let us admire God's free grace who were once under the power and tyranny of Satan	
<u>Chapter 28: Christ's Humiliation in His Incarnation</u>	102
Proof text: [1 Timothy 3.16]	
Wherein did Christ's humiliation consist?	
Use 1: Of instruction	

Use 2: Of exhortation
Use 3: Of comfort

Chapter 29: Christ's Exaltation106

Proof text: [Philippians 2.9]
Wherein consists Christ exaltation?
Use 1: Of information
Use 2: Of comfort.
Use 3: Of exhortation. Has God highly exalted Christ? Labor to exalt Him in His Person and His Truths

Chapter 30: Christ the Redeemer109

How does the Spirit apply to us the redemption purchased by Christ?
Use 1: Of instruction
Use 2: Of trial
Use 3: Of comfort to such as are redeemed
Use 4: Of exhortation

Part 5: The Application of Redemption

Chapter 31: Faith111

Proof text: [Galatians 2.20]
Types of Faith
What is justifying faith?
How is faith wrought?
Wherein lies the preciousness of faith?
How does faith justify?
Why should faith save and justify more than any other grace?
Use 1: Of exhortation. Let us above all things, labor for faith
Use 2: Of trial. Let us try whether we have faith
How then shall we know a true faith? By its noble effects?
How may we judge the growth of faith?
But I fear I have no faith. Distinguishing between weak faith and no faith

Chapter 32: Effectual calling114

Proof text: [Romans 8.30]
What is effectual calling?
What are the means of this effectual call?
From what does God call men?
To what does God call men?
What is the cause of the effectual call? God's electing love?
What are the qualifications of this call?
Use 1: See the necessity of the effectual call.
Use 2: Of trial whether we are effectually called.
Use 3: Of comfort to those who are called of God.
Use 4: Let such as are called be thankful to God for that unspeakable blessings.
Use 5: Walk worthy of your high calling.

Chapter 33: Justification117

Proof text: [Romans 3.24]
What is Justification?
What is meant by Justification?
Four maxims about Justification
Use 1: See from hence, that there is nothing within us that could justify, but something without us
Use 2: Of exhortation

Use 3: Comfort to the justified

[Chapter 34: Adoption](#)119

Proof text: [John 1.12]

Our sonship differs from Christ's

Adoption is twofold

Three positions of adoption

Questions on adoption

Use 1: See twofold-Love and Unbelief

Use 2: Try whether you are adopted

Use 3: Rejoice in the benefits of adoption

Use 4: Extol and magnify God's mercy, Who has adopted you into His family

[Chapter 35: Sanctification](#)124

Proof text: [1 Thessalonians 4.3]

Sanctification in parts

Sanctification defined

Sanctification in seven positions

Sanctification's counterfeits

The Necessity of Sanctification

The Signs of Sanctification

Use 1: The main thing a Christian should look after is Sanctification

Use 2: Above all things pursue after Sanctification

Use 3: Has God brought a clean thing out of an unclean thing?

[Chapter 36: Assurance](#)130

The first benefit flowing from Sanctification

Have all sanctified persons Assurance?

What is Assurance?

Has a sanctified soul such an Assurance as excludes all doubting?

What are the differences between true Assurance and Presumption?

What may excite us to look after Assurance?

What shall they do who have not Assurance?

How may deserted souls be comforted who are cast down for want of Assurance?

What shall we do to get Assurance?

How should they conduct themselves who have assurance?

[Chapter 37: Peace](#)134

Proof text: [1 Peter 1.2]

Several species or kinds of Peace

Whence comes spiritual Peace?

Whether such as are destitute of grace have Peace?

Signs of false Peace

How shall we know that ours is a true peace?

Have all sanctified persons this peace?

But why have not all believers the full enjoyment and possession of peace?

Use 1: Labor for this blessed peace-peace with God and conscience

Use 2: You who have this peace, it is a precious jewel, do not lose it

[Chapter 38: Joy](#)137

Proof text: [Galatians 5.22]

Spiritual Joy

How is this Joy wrought?

What are the seasons in which God usually gives His people divine Joy?

What are the differences between worldly joys and spiritual?
 Why is this Joy to be labored for?
 What shall we do to obtain this spiritual Joy?
 How shall we comfort those who want Joy?
 Use 1: Then see that religion is no melancholy thing; it brings joy
 Use 2: If God gives His people such joy in this life, oh! What glorious joy will He give them in heaven!

[Chapter 39: Growth in Grace](#)140

Proof text: [2 Peter 3.18]
 Grace is progressive and growing as a tree
 In how many ways may a Christian be said to grow in grace?
 What is the manner of a Christian's growth?
 Whence is it that true grace cannot but grow?
 What motives or incentives are there to make us grow in grace?
 Use 1: Lament the want of growth
 How shall we know whether we grow in grace?
 What shall we do to grow in grace?
 How may we comfort such as complain they do not grow in grace?

[Chapter 40: Perseverance](#)143

Proof text: [1 Peter 1.5]
 Believers Persevere
 Means by which believers Persevere
 Arguments to prove the saint's Perseverance
 Answers to the Objections of the Arminians
 Use 1: For instruction
 Use 2: For consolation
 Use 3: For exhortation

Part 6: Death and the Last Day

[Chapter 41: The Death of the Righteous](#)148

Proof text: [Philippians 1.21]; [1 Corinthians 2.2]
 For me to live is Christ
 To die is gain
 How come the saints to have all this gain?
 Use 1: See the great difference between the death of the godly and the wicked
 Use 2: If saints gain such glorious things at death, well may they desire it
 Use 3: We may here find comfort in the loss of dear and pious relations

[Chapter 42: A Believer's Privilege at Death](#)150

A Christian's Hope
 What benefits do believers receive at death?
 Use 1: See what little cause believers have to fear death
 Use 2: Spend much time in musing upon those benefits, which you shall have, by Christ at death
 Use 3: Comfort to the saints.

[Chapter 43: The Resurrection](#)154

Proof text: [John 5.28-29]
 Benefits of believers from Christ at the resurrection
 Use 1: It is sad news to the wicked, that they shall come to judgment, but not stand in judgment
 Use 2: Meditate much upon the Day of Judgment
 Use 3: At the last Day of Judgment, you may be sure to be acquitted and have glorious

I. A Preliminary Discourse on Catechizing.

A. Proof text

1. *[Colossians 1.23]- If ye continue in the faith grounded and settled.*

B. It is the duty of Christians to be settled in the doctrine of faith.

1. Christians to be settled

- a. *[1 Peter 5.10]- But the God of all grace, who hath called us unto his eternal glory by Christ Jesus, after that ye have suffered a while, make you perfect, stablish, strengthen, settle you.*
- b. *[Jude 13]- Raging waves of the sea, foaming out their own shame; wandering stars, to whom is reserved the blackness of darkness for ever.*
- c. *[Genesis 49.4]- Unstable as water, thou shalt not excel; because thou wentest up to thy father's bed; then defiledst thou it: he went up to my couch.*
- d. *[2 Peter 2.1]- But there were false prophets also among the people, even as there shall be false teachers among you, who privily shall bring in damnable heresies, even denying the Lord that bought them, and bring upon themselves swift destruction.*
- e. *"As feathers will be blown every way, so will feathery Christians."* - Cyprian
- f. *[Ephesians 4.14]- That we henceforth be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, and cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive;*

2. It is the great end of the Word preached, to bring us to a settlement in religion.

- a. *[Ephesians 4.11-14]- And he gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers; For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ: Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ: hat we henceforth be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, and cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive;*
- b. *[Jeremiah 23.29]- Is not my word like as a fire? saith the LORD; and like a hammer that breaketh the rock in pieces?*

3. To be settled in religion is both a Christian's excellence and honor.

- a. *"Milk settles to cream."*
- b. *[Proverbs 26.31]- The hoary head is a crown of glory, if it be found in the way of righteousness.*
- c. *"It is the best sights to see an old disciple; to see silver hairs adorned with golden virtues."*

4. Such as are not settled in the faith can never suffer for it.

- a. *"Skeptics in religion hardly ever prove martyrs."*
- b. *"When they think of the joys of Heaven they will espouse the gospel, but when they think of persecution they desert it."*
- c. *"The apostate seems to put God and Satan in balance, and having weighed both services, prefers the devil's service..."* - Tertullian
- d. *[Hebrews 6.6]- If they shall fall away, to renew them again unto repentance; seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put him to an open shame.*

5. Not to be settled in the faith is provoking to God.

- a. *[Psalm 78.57,59]- But turned back, and dealt unfaithfully like their fathers: they were turned aside like a deceitful bow. When God heard this, he was wroth, and greatly abhorred Israel:*
- b. *"The apostate drops as a wind-fall into the devil's mouth."*

6. If you are never settled in religion, you will never grow.
 - a. *[Ephesians 4.15]- But speaking the truth in love, may grow up into him in all things, which is the head, even Christ:*
7. There is a great need to be settled, because there are so many things to unsettle us.
 - a. *[1 John 2.26]- These things have I written unto you concerning them that seduce you.*
 - b. *[Ephesians 4.14]- That we henceforth be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, and cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive;*
 - c. *"Seducers taken from the word for those that can throw dice and cast them for their best advantage."*
 - d. Seducers and their cheats.
 - 1.) Fine Speech
 - a.) *[Romans 16.18]- For they that are such serve not our Lord Jesus Christ, but their own belly; and by good words and fair speeches deceive the hearts of the simple.*
 - 2.) Extraordinary piety
 - 3.) Zeal
 - 4.) Vilifying and nullifying sound orthodox teachers
 - a.) *[Galatians 4.17]- They zealously affect you, but not well; yea, they would exclude you, that ye might affect them.*
 - 5.) To preach the doctrine of liberty
 - 6.) To unsettle Christians with persecution
 - a.) *[2 Timothy 3.12]- Yea, and all that will live godly in Christ Jesus shall suffer persecution.*
 - b.) *"The gospel is a rose that cannot be plucked without thorns."*
 - c.) *[Revelations 12.4]- And his tail drew the third part of the stars of heaven, and did cast them to the earth: and the dragon stood before the woman which was ready to be delivered, for to devour her child as soon as it was born.*
 - d.) *[Jude 6]- And the angels which kept not their first estate, but left their own habitation, he hath reserved in everlasting chains under darkness unto the judgment of the great day.*
 - e.) *[Job 38.7]-When the morning stars sang together, and all the sons of God shouted for joy?*
 - f.) *[1 Timothy 3.6]- Not a novice, lest being lifted up with pride he fall into the condemnation of the devil.*
- C. The way for Christians to be settled is to be well grounded
 1. Christians should be grounded in the knowledge of fundamentals.
 2. *[Hebrews 5.12]- For when for the time ye ought to be teachers, ye have need that one teach you again which be the first principles of the oracles of God; and are become such as have need of milk, and not of strong meat.*
 - a. Else we cannot serve God aright.
 - 1.) *[Romans 12.1]- I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, which is your reasonable service.*
 - b. Knowledge of the grounds of religion enriches the mind
 - c. It furnishes us with armor of proof, weapons to fight against the adversaries of the Truth.
 - d. It is the holy seed of which grace is formed.
 - 1.) *[Psalm 9.10]- And they that know thy name will put their trust in thee: for thou, Lord, hast not forsaken them that seek thee.*

2.) *[Ephesians 3.17]- That Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith; that ye, being rooted and grounded in love,*

3. This grounding is the best way to be settled.

D. Uses of propositions.

1. People are unsettled, ready to embrace every novel opinion because they are ungrounded.
 - a. *[2 Peter 3.16]- As also in all his epistles, speaking in them of these things; in which are some things hard to be understood, which they that are unlearned and unstable wrest, as they do also the other scriptures, unto their own destruction.*
2. See the great necessity there is of laying down the main grounds of religion by catechizing, that the weakest judgement may be instructed in the knowledge of the Truth.
 - a. *[Hebrews 6.1]- Therefore leaving the principles of the doctrine of Christ, let us go on unto perfection; not laying again the foundation of repentance from dead works, and of faith toward God,*
 - b. *[2 Timothy 1.13]- Hold fast the form of sound words, which thou hast heard of me, in faith and love which is in Christ Jesus.*
 - c. *[Hebrews 5.12]- For when for the time ye ought to be teachers, ye have need that one teach you again which be the first principles of the oracles of God; and are become such as have need of milk, and not of strong meat.*

INTRODUCTION

II. Man's Chief End.

A. The glorifying of God.

1. *[1 Peter 4.11]- If any man speak, let him speak as the oracles of God; if any man minister, let him do it as of the ability which God giveth: that God in all things may be glorified through Jesus Christ, to whom be praise and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.*
2. *[1 Corinthians 10.31]- Whether therefore ye eat, or drink, or whatsoever ye do, do all to the glory of God.*
3. A Two-fold Glory
 - a. His intrinsic glory-the glory that God has in Himself.
 - 1.) *[Acts 7.2]- And he said, Men, brethren, and fathers, hearken; The God of glory appeared unto our father Abraham, when he was in Mesopotamia, before he dwelt in Charran,*
 - 2.) *[Isaiah 48.11]- For mine own sake, even for mine own sake, will I do it: for how should my name be polluted? and I will not give my glory unto another.*
 - 3.) *[Genesis 41.40]-Thou shalt be over my house, and according unto thy word shall all my people be ruled: only in the throne will I be greater than thou.*
 - b. The glory ascribed to Him
 - 1.) *[1 Chronicles 16.29]- Give unto the Lord the glory due unto his name: bring an offering, and come before him: worship the Lord in the beauty of holiness.*
 - 2.) *[1 Corinthians 6.20]- For ye are bought with a price: therefore glorify God in your body, and in your spirit, which are God's.*
 - 3.) *[Philippians 1.20]- According to my earnest expectation and my hope, that in nothing I shall be ashamed, but that with all boldness, as always, so now also Christ shall be magnified in my body, whether it be by life, or by death.*
4. What is it to glorify God?
 - a. Appreciation

- 1.) *[Psalm 92.8]- But thou, LORD, art most high for evermore.*
 - 2.) *[Psalm 97.9]- For thou, LORD, art high above all the earth: thou art exalted far above all gods.*
 - 3.) *[Psalm 8.3]- When I consider thy heavens, the work of thy fingers, the moon and the stars, which thou hast ordained;*
- b. Adoration
- 1.) *[Psalm 29.2]- Give unto the LORD the glory due unto his name; worship the LORD in the beauty of holiness.*
 - 2.) Two-fold worship
 - a.) A civil reverence - giving to persons of honor.
 - 1.) *[Genesis 13.7]- And there was a strife between the herdmen of Abram's cattle and the herdmen of Lot's cattle: and the Canaanite and the Perizzite dwelled then in the land.*
 - 2.) *Piety is no enemy to courtesy.*
 - b.) A divine worship – giving to God as his royal prerogative.
 - 1.) *[Nehemiah 8.6]- And Ezra blessed the LORD, the great God. And all the people answered, Amen, Amen, with lifting up their hands: and they bowed their heads, and worshipped the LORD with their faces to the ground.*
 - 2.) *[Leviticus 10.1]- And Nadab and Abihu, the sons of Aaron, took either of them his censer, and put fire therein, and put incense thereon, and offered strange fire before the LORD, which he commanded them not.*
- c. Affection
- 1.) God counts Himself glorified when He is loved.
 - 2.) *[Deuteronomy 6.5]- And thou shalt love the LORD thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy might.*
 - 3.) Two-fold love
 - a.) *Amor concupiscentiae*-self love as when we love another when he does us a good turn.
 - b.) *Amor amicitiae*- a love of delight as when our hearts are set upon a treasure.
 - 1.) *[Song of Solomon 8.2]- I would lead thee, and bring thee into my mother's house, who would instruct me: I would cause thee to drink of spiced wine of the juice of my pomegranate.*
 - 2.) *[Song of Solomon 2.5]- Stay me with flagons, comfort me with apples: for I am sick of love.*
- d. Subjection
- 1.) *[Matthew 2.11]- And when they were come into the house, they saw the young child with Mary his mother, and fell down, and worshipped him: and when they had opened their treasures, they presented unto him gifts; gold, and frankincense and myrrh.*
 - 2.) *[1 Samuel 17.32]- And David said to Saul, Let no man's heart fail because of him; thy servant will go and fight with this Philistine.*
5. Why must we glorify God?
- a. He gives us being.
 - 1.) *[Psalm 100.3]- Know ye that the LORD he is God: it is he that hath made us, and not we ourselves; we are his people, and the sheep of his pasture.*
 - 2.) *[Romans 11.36]- For of him, and through him, and to him, are all things: to whom be glory for ever. Amen.*
 - b. God made all things for His glory.

- 1.) *[Proverbs 16.4]- The LORD hath made all things for himself: yea, even the wicked for the day of evil.*
 - 2.) *[Exodus 14.17]- And I, behold, I will harden the hearts of the Egyptians, and they shall follow them: and I will get me honour upon Pharaoh, and upon all his host, upon his chariots, and upon his horsemen.*
 - 3.) *[Isaiah 43.12]- I have declared, and have saved, and I have shewed, when there was no strange god among you: therefore ye are my witnesses, saith the LORD, that I am God.*
 - 4.) *[1 Peter 2.9]- But ye are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people; that ye should shew forth the praises of him who hath called you out of darkness into his marvelous light;*
- c. Glory of God has intrinsic value and excellence.
- 1.) *[Judges 18.24]- And he said, Ye have taken away my gods which I made, and the priest, and ye are gone away: and what have I more? and what is this that ye say unto me, What aileth thee?*
- d. Creatures below and above us give glory to God.
- 1.) *[Psalm 19.1]- The heavens declare the glory of God; and the firmament sheweth his handywork.*
 - 2.) *[Isaiah 43.20]- The beast of the field shall honour me, the dragons and the owls: because I give waters in the wilderness, and rivers in the desert, to give drink to my people, my chosen.*
 - 3.) *[Hebrews 1.14]- Are they not all ministering spirits, sent forth to minister for them who shall be heirs of salvation?*
 - 4.) *[Hebrews 2.7]- Thou madest him a little lower than the angels; thou crownedst him with glory and honour, and didst set him over the works of thy hands:*
 - 5.) *[2 Corinthians 5.21]- For he hath made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in him.*
- e. Our hopes hang upon Him.
- 1.) *[Psalm 39.7]- And now, Lord, what wait I for? my hope is in thee.*
 - 2.) *[Psalm 42.5]- Why art thou cast down, O my soul? and why art thou disquieted in me? hope thou in God: for I shall yet praise him for the help of his countenance.*
 - 3.) *[Psalm 87.7]- As well the singers as the players on instruments shall be there: all my springs are in thee.*
6. In how many ways may we glorify God?
- a. We aim purely for His glory.
 - 1.) *Terminus ad quem* – the ultimate end of all actions.
 - 2.) *[John 8.50]- And I seek not mine own glory: there is one that seeketh and judgeth.*
 - 3.) *[Matthew 6.2]- Therefore when thou doest thine alms, do not sound a trumpet before thee, as the hypocrites do in the synagogues and in the streets, that they may have glory of men. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward.*
 - 4.) We prefer God's glory above all things.
 - 5.) We are content that the will of God should take place though it may cross ours.
 - 6.) We are content to be outshined by others in gifts and esteem so that His glory may be increased.
 - a.) *[Philippians 1.15]- Some indeed preach Christ even of envy and strife; and some also of good will:*
 - b. By an ingenuous confession of sin.
 - 1.) *[Luke 23.41]- And we indeed justly; for we receive the due reward of our deeds: but this man hath done nothing amiss.*

- 2.) *[Joshua 7.19]- And Joshua said unto Achan, My son, give, I pray thee, glory to the LORD God of Israel, and make confession unto him; and tell me now what thou hast done; hide it not from me.*
 - 3.) *[Genesis 3.12]- And the man said, The woman whom thou gavest to be with me, she gave me of the tree, and I did eat.*
 - 4.) *[Nehemiah 9.33]- Howbeit thou art just in all that is brought upon us; for thou hast done right, but we have done wickedly:*
 - 5.) *[Luke 15.18]- I will arise and go to my father, and will say unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and before thee,*
- c. By believing
- 1.) *[Romans 4.20]- He staggered not at the promise of God through unbelief; but was strong in faith, giving glory to God;*
 - 2.) *[1 John 5.10]- He that believeth on the Son of God hath the witness in himself: he that believeth not God hath made him a liar; because he believeth not the record that God gave of his Son.*
 - 3.) *[John 3.33]- He that hath received his testimony hath set to his seal that God is true.*
 - 4.) *[Psalm 31.5]- Into thine hand I commit my spirit: thou hast redeemed me, O LORD God of truth.*
 - 5.) *[Daniel 3.17]- If it be so, our God whom we serve is able to deliver us from the burning fiery furnace, and he will deliver us out of thine hand, O king.*
- d. By being tender to His glory.
- 1.) *[Psalm 69.9]- For the zeal of thine house hath eaten me up; and the reproaches of them that reproached thee are fallen upon me.*
- e. By our fruitfulness.
- 1.) *[John 15.8]- Herein is my Father glorified, that ye bear much fruit; so shall ye be my disciples.*
 - 2.) *[Philippians 1.11]- Being filled with the fruits of righteousness, which are by Jesus Christ, unto the glory and praise of God.*
 - 3.) *[1 Corinthians 9.7]- Who goeth a warfare any time at his own charges? who planteth a vineyard, and eateth not of the fruit thereof? or who feedeth a flock, and eateth not of the milk of the flock?*
 - 4.) *[Matthew 5.16]- Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father which is in heaven.*
 - 5.) *[Acts 10.38]- How God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Ghost and with power: who went about doing good, and healing all that were oppressed of the devil; for God was with him.*
 - 6.) *[Jeremiah 11.16]- The LORD called thy name, A green olive tree, fair, and of goodly fruit: with the noise of a great tumult he hath kindled fire upon it, and the branches of it are broken.*
 - 7.) *[Song of Solomon 7.7]- This thy stature is like to a palm tree, and thy breasts to clusters of grapes.*
 - 8.) *[Luke 7.47]- Wherefore I say unto thee, Her sins, which are many, are forgiven; for she loved much: but to whom little is forgiven, the same loveth little.*
- f. By being content in that state in which Providence has placed us.
- 1.) *[2 Corinthians 11.23]- Are they ministers of Christ? (I speak as a fool) I am more; in labours more abundant, in stripes above measure, in prisons more frequent, in deaths oft.*
 - 2.) *[Philippians 4.13]- I can do all things through Christ which strengtheneth me.*
 - 3.) *[Psalm 16.5]- The LORD is the portion of mine inheritance and of my cup: thou maintainest my lot.*

- g. By working out our own salvation.
 - 1.) *[Philippians 2.12]- Wherefore, my beloved, as ye have always obeyed, not as in my presence only, but now much more in my absence, work out your own salvation with fear and trembling.*
- h. By living to God.
 - 1.) *[2 Corinthians 5.15]- And that he died for all, that they which live should not henceforth live unto themselves, but unto him which died for them, and rose again.*
 - 2.) *[Philippians 1.20]- According to my earnest expectation and my hope, that in nothing I shall be ashamed, but that with all boldness, as always, so now also Christ shall be magnified in my body, whether it be by life, or by death.*
- i. By walking cheerfully.
 - 1.) *[2 Corinthians 1.4]- Who comforteth us in all our tribulation, that we may be able to comfort them which are in any trouble, by the comfort wherewith we ourselves are comforted of God.*
 - 2.) *[1 Thessalonians 1.6]- And ye became followers of us, and of the Lord, having received the word in much affliction, with joy of the Holy Ghost.*
 - 3.) *[Psalm 100.2]- Serve the LORD with gladness: come before his presence with singing.*
- j. By standing up for God's truths.
 - 1.) *[Jude 3]- Beloved, when I gave all diligence to write unto you of the common salvation, it was needful for me to write unto you, and exhort you that ye should earnestly contend for the faith which was once delivered unto the saints.*
- k. By praising Him
 - 1.) *[Psalm 50.23]- Whoso offereth praise glorifieth me: and to him that ordereth his conversation aright will I shew the salvation of God.*
 - 2.) *[Psalm 86.12]- I will praise thee, O Lord my God, with all my heart: and I will glorify thy name for evermore.*
 - 3.) *[1 Corinthians 3.16]- Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you?*
- l. By being zealous for His Name.
 - 1.) *[Numbers 25.11]- Phinehas, the son of Eleazar, the son of Aaron the priest, hath turned my wrath away from the children of Israel, while he was zealous for my sake among them, that I consumed not the children of Israel in my jealousy.*
 - 2.) *[Revelation 2.2]- I know thy works, and thy labour, and thy patience, and how thou canst not bear them which are evil: and thou hast tried them which say they are apostles, and are not, and hast found them liars:*
 - 3.) *[John 2.14-17]- And found in the temple those that sold oxen and sheep and doves, and the changers of money sitting: And when he had made a scourge of small cords, he drove them all out of the temple, and the sheep, and the oxen; and poured out the changers' money, and overthrew the tables; And said unto them that sold doves, Take these things hence; make not my Father's house an house of merchandise. And his disciples remembered that it was written, The zeal of thine house hath eaten me up.*
- m. By keeping an eye to God in our natural and in our civil actions.
 - 1.) Natural - eating and drinking.
 - a.) *[1 Corinthians 10.31]- Whether therefore ye eat, or drink, or whatsoever ye do, do all to the glory of God.*

- 16

- b. It reproves several types of people:
 - 1.) Those that bring no glory to God.
 - a.) *[Ezekiel 15.2]- Son of man, what is the vine tree more than any tree, or than a branch which is among the trees of the forest?*
 - b.) *[Esther 6.3]- And the king said, What honour and dignity hath been done to Mordecai for this? Then said the king's servants that ministered unto him, There is nothing done for him.*
 - c.) *[Matthew 25.30]- And cast ye the unprofitable servant into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.*
 - 2.) Those that rob glory from God.
 - a.) *[Malachi 3.8]- Will a man rob God? Yet ye have robbed me. But ye say, Wherein have we robbed thee? In tithes and offerings.*
 - b.) Ascribe all prosperity to their own wit and industry
 - 1.) *[Deuteronomy 8.18]- But thou shalt remember the Lord thy God: for it is he that giveth thee power to get wealth, that he may establish his covenant which he sware unto thy fathers, as it is this day.*
 - c.) Look to their own glory in religious duties.
 - 1.) *[Acts 5.39]- But if it be of God, ye cannot overthrow it; lest haply ye be found even to fight against God.*
 - 2.) *[1 Thessalonians 2.16]- Forbidding us to speak to the Gentiles that they might be saved, to fill up their sins alway: for the wrath is come upon them to the uttermost.*
 - 3.) *[Matthew 5.14]- Ye are the light of the world. A city that is set on an hill cannot be hid.*
 - 4.) *[Luke 11.52]- Woe unto you, lawyers! for ye have taken away the key of knowledge: ye entered not in yourselves, and them that were entering in ye hindered.*
 - 3.) Those that fight against God's glory.
 - c. Exhortation for everyone in their own place to make it their chief end and design, to glorify God.
 - 1.) To magistrates
 - a.) *[Psalm 82.6]- I have said, Ye are gods; and all of you are children of the most High.*
 - 2.) To ministers
 - a.) *[2 Timothy 4.1]- I charge thee therefore before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, who shall judge the quick and the dead at his appearing and his kingdom;*
 - b.) *[2 Chronicles 11.15]- And he ordained him priests for the high places, and for the devils, and for the calves which he had made.*
 - 3.) Masters of families
 - a.) *[Genesis 18.19]- For I know him, that he will command his children and his household after him, and they shall keep the way of the LORD, to do justice and judgment; that the LORD may bring upon Abraham that which he hath spoken of him.*
- B. The Enjoying of God.
- 1. *[Psalm 73.25]- Whom have I in heaven but thee? and there is none upon earth that I desire beside thee.*

2. The Enjoyment of God in this life.
 - a. In His Ordinances
 - 1.) *[Psalm 63.2]- To see thy power and thy glory, so as I have seen thee in the sanctuary.*
 - 2.) *[Luke 24.32]- And they said one to another, Did not our heart burn within us, while he talked with us by the way, and while he opened to us the scriptures?*
 - 3.) *[2 Corinthians 3.18]- But we all, with open face beholding as in a glass the glory of the Lord, are changed into the same image from glory to glory, even as by the Spirit of the Lord.*
 - 4.) *[Romans 5.5]- And hope maketh not ashamed; because the love of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Ghost which is given unto us.*
 - 5.) *[1 John 1.3]- That which we have seen and heard declare we unto you, that ye also may have fellowship with us: and truly our fellowship is with the Father, and with his Son Jesus Christ.*
 - b. Use 1: *How wicked are they who prefer the enjoyment of their lusts before the enjoyment of God!*
 - 1.) *[2 Peter 3.3]- Knowing this first, that there shall come in the last days scoffers, walking after their own lusts,*
 - 2.) *[Hosea 4.11]- Whoredom and wine and new wine take away the heart.*
 - 3.) *[Proverbs 7.23]- Till a dart strike through his liver; as a bird hasteth to the snare, and knoweth not that it is for his life.*
 - c. Use 2: Let it be our great care to enjoy God's sweet presence in His ordinances.
 - 1.) *[Psalm 42.2]- My soul thirsteth for God, for the living God: when shall I come and appear before God?*
 - 2.) *[Job 30.28]- I went mourning without the sun: I stood up, and I cried in the congregation.*
 - 3.) *[Psalm 36.8-9]- They shall be abundantly satisfied with the fatness of thy house; and thou shalt make them drink of the river of thy pleasures. For with thee is the fountain of life: in thy light shall we see light.*
3. The Enjoyment of God in the life to come. To enjoy God *forever*.
 - a. *[Esther 2.12]- Now when every maid's turn was come to go in to king Ahasuerus, after that she had been twelve months, according to the manner of the women, (for so were the days of their purifications accomplished, to wit, six months with oil of myrrh, and six months with sweet odours, and with other things for the purifying of the women;)*
 - b. God is the chief good, *summum bonum*, therefore the enjoyment of Him is the highest felicity.
 - c. God is the universal good, *bonum in quo omnia bona*, "a good, in which are all goods."
 - d. God is an unmixed good, in this life, "for every drop of honey is a drop of gall."
 - 1.) *[Ecclesiastes 1.2]- Vanity of vanities, saith the Preacher, vanity of vanities; all is vanity.*
 - e. God is a satisfying good.
 - 1.) *[Psalm 17.15]- As for me, I will behold thy face in righteousness: I shall be satisfied, when I awake, with thy likeness.*
 - f. God is a delicious good, *In Deo quadam dulcedine delectatur anima immo rapitur*, "a rapturous delight and quintessence of joy"
 - 1.) *[1 Peter 1.8]- Whom having not seen, ye love; in whom, though now ye see him not, yet believing, ye rejoice with joy unspeakable and full of glory:*
 - g. God is a superlative good. "Who would weigh a feather against a mountain of gold?"

- h. God is an eternal good.
 - 1.) *[Daniel 7.9]- I beheld till the thrones were cast down, and the Ancient of days did sit, whose garment was white as snow, and the hair of his head like the pure wool: his throne was like the fiery flame, and his wheels as burning fire.*
 - 2.) *[1 Peter 5.4]- And when the chief Shepherd shall appear, ye shall receive a crown of glory that fadeth not away.*
 - 3.) *[Psalm 36.9]- For with thee is the fountain of life: in thy light shall we see light.*
- i. Use 1: Let it be our chief end of our living to enjoy this chief good hereafter.
 - 1.) To set out this excellent state of a glorified soul's enjoyment of God.
 - a.) *[1 Thessalonians 4.17]- Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord.*
 - b.) It must not be understood in a sensual manner and not conceive any carnal pleasures in Heaven.
 - c.) We shall have a lively sense of this glorious of this glorious estate.
 - d.) We shall be able to bear a sight of that glory.
 - 1.) *[Exodus 33.22]- And it shall come to pass, while my glory passeth by, that I will put thee in a clift of the rock, and will cover thee with my hand while I pass by:*
 - e.) We shall have more than a bare contemplation of Him. There shall be a loving of God as well, not only an inspection but also a possession of Him.
 - 1.) *[John 17.24]- Father, I will that they also, whom thou hast given me, be with me where I am; that they may behold my glory, which thou hast given me: for thou lovedst me before the foundation of the world.*
 - 2.) *[John 17.22]- And the glory which thou gavest me I have given them; that they may be one, even as we are one:*
 - 3.) *[Romans 8.18]- For I reckon that the sufferings of this present time are not worthy to be compared with the glory which shall be revealed in us.*
 - f.) There will be no intermission in the state of glory.
- j. Use 2: Let this be a spur to duty.
 - 1.) *[1 Corinthians 15.10]- But by the grace of God I am what I am: and his grace which was bestowed upon me was not in vain; but I laboured more abundantly than they all: yet not I, but the grace of God which was with me.*
 - 2.) *[1 Thessalonians 4.17]-Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord.*
- k. Use 3: Let this comfort the godly in all present miseries they feel.

III. The Scriptures are the rule that God gave to direct us how we may glorify and enjoy Him

A. Not only the rule but also the only rule.

- 1. *[2 Timothy 3.16]- All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness:*
- 2. *[2 Peter 1.21]- For the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost.*

B. How does it appear that the Scriptures have a *Jus Divinum*, a divine authority stamped upon them?

- 1. *[1 Peter 1.12]- Unto whom it was revealed, that not unto themselves, but unto us they did minister the things, which are now reported unto you by them that have preached the gospel*

unto you with the Holy Ghost sent down from heaven; which things the angels desire to look into.

2. *[Isaiah 65.17]- For, behold, I create new heavens and a new earth: and the former shall not be remembered, nor come into mind.*
3. *[Numbers 14.35]- I the Lord have said, I will surely do it unto all this evil congregation, that are gathered together against me: in this wilderness they shall be consumed, and there they shall die.*
4. Seven cogent arguments for it being the Word of God.
 - a. Its antiquity- *“That which is of the greatest antiquity, id verum quod primum, is to be received as most sacred and authentic.”*-Tertullian
 - b. Its miraculous preservation in all the ages.
 - c. By the matter contained in it.
 - 1.) *[Psalm 12.6]- The words of the Lord are pure words: as silver tried in a furnace of earth, purified seven times.*
 - 2.) *[Psalm 119.140]- Thy word is very pure: therefore thy servant loveth it.*
 - 3.) *[John 17.17]- Sanctify them through thy truth: thy word is truth.*
 - 4.) *[Titus 2. 12]- Teaching us that, denying ungodliness and worldly lusts, we should live soberly, righteously, and godly, in this present world;*
 - 5.) *[Ephesians 6.17]- And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God:*
 - d. By its predictions.
 - 1.) *[Isaiah 7.14]- Therefore the Lord himself shall give you a sign; Behold, a virgin shall conceive, and bear a son, and shall call his name Immanuel.*
 - 2.) *[Daniel 9.26]- And after threescore and two weeks shall Messiah be cut off, but not for himself; and the people of the prince that shall come shall destroy the city and the sanctuary; and the end thereof shall be with a flood, and unto the end of the war desolations are determined.*
 - 3.) *[Exodus 12.41]- And it came to pass at the end of the four hundred and thirty years, even the selfsame day it came to pass, that all the hosts of the Lord went out from the land of Egypt.*
 - e. By the impartiality of those men of God who wrote the Scriptures, who do not spare to set down their own failings.
 - 1.) Moses records his own impatience for striking the rock.
 - 2.) David relates his adultery and bloodshed.
 - 3.) Peter relates his denial of Christ.
 - 4.) Jonah accounts his own passions.
 - a.) *[Jonah 4.9]- And God said to Jonah, Doest thou well to be angry for the gourd? And he said, I do well to be angry, even unto death.*
 - f. By the power and efficacy that the Word of God has upon the souls and consciences of men.
 - 1.) *[2 Corinthians 3.3]- Forasmuch as ye are manifestly declared to be the epistle of Christ ministered by us, written not with ink, but with the Spirit of the living God; not in tables of stone, but in fleshy tables of the heart.*
 - 2.) *[Romans 15.4]- For whatsoever things were written aforetime were written for our learning, that we through patience and comfort of the scriptures might have hope.*
 - 3.) *[2 Corinthians 4.17]- For our light affliction, which is but for a moment, worketh for us a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory;*
 - 4.) *[Lamentations 3.31]- For the Lord will not cast off for ever:*
 - 5.) *[Psalm 119.50]- This is my comfort in my affliction: for thy word hath quickened me.*

- g. By the miracles by which Scripture is confirmed.
5. *"The papists cannot deny that the Scripture is divine and sacred; but they affirm quoad nos, with respect to us, it receives its divine authority from the church."*
 - a. ***[1 Timothy 3.15]- But if I tarry long, that thou mayest know how thou oughtest to behave thyself in the house of God, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and ground of the truth.***
 - b. ***[Ephesians 2.20]- And are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner stone;***
 6. Are all of the books in the Bible of the same divine authority?
 - a. Those that we call canonical.
 7. Why are the Scriptures called canonical?
 - a. A rule of faith.
 - b. A canon to direct our lives.
 - c. The judge in controversies.
 - d. The rock of infallibility.
 8. Are the Scriptures a complete rule?
 - a. ***[2 Timothy 3.15]- And that from a child thou hast known the holy scriptures, which are able to make thee wise unto salvation through faith which is in Christ Jesus.***
 - b. ***[Revelation 22.18]- For I testify unto every man that heareth the words of the prophecy of this book, If any man shall add unto these things, God shall add unto him the plagues that are written in this book:***
 9. What is the main scope and end of Scripture?
 - a. To reveal the way to salvation.
 - b. It makes a clear discovery of Christ.
 - c. ***[John 20.31]- But these are written, that ye might believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God; and that believing ye might have life through his name.***
 10. Who should have the power of interpreting the Scripture?
 - a. Not the church or the popes as the papists believe.
 - b. The Scripture, or rather the Spirit speaking in the Scripture is it's own interpreter.
 - c. The church of God has appointed some to expound and interpret Scripture, therefore has given gifts to men.
 - d. ***[Malachi 2.7]- For the priest's lips should keep knowledge, and they should seek the law at his mouth: for he is the messenger of the LORD of hosts.***
 11. Will this pin our faith upon men?
 - a. God has not only given His ministers gifts of interpreting but also His people gifts of discernment.
 - b. ***[1 Corinthians 12.10]- To another the working of miracles; to another prophecy; to another discerning of spirits; to another divers kinds of tongues; to another the interpretation of tongues:***
 - c. ***[Acts 17.10-11]- And the brethren immediately sent away Paul and Silas by night unto Berea: who coming thither went into the synagogue of the Jews. These were more noble than those in Thessalonica, in that they received the word with all readiness of mind, and searched the scriptures daily, whether those things were so.***
 - d. ***[2 Timothy 3.16]- All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness:***

- C. Use 1: See the wonderful goodness of God, who, besides the light of nature, has committed to us the sacred Scriptures.
1. *[Psalm 147.20]- He hath not dealt so with any nation: and as for his judgments, they have not known them. Praise ye the LORD.*
 2. *[John 14.22]- Judas saith unto him, not Iscariot, Lord, how is it that thou wilt manifest thyself unto us, and not unto the world?*
 3. *[John 15.22]- If I had not come and spoken unto them, they had not had sin: but now they have no cloak for their sin.*
- D. Use 2: Is all Scripture of divine inspiration?
1. Reprove the Papists who take away part of Scripture.
 - a. *[Acts 5.2]- And kept back part of the price, his wife also being privy to it, and brought a certain part, and laid it at the apostles' feet.*
 - b. *[Revelation 22.19]- And if any man shall take away from the words of the book of this prophecy, God shall take away his part out of the book of life, and out of the holy city, and from the things which are written in this book.*
 2. Condemn the Antinomians who lay aside the Old Testament as useless.
 - a. *[Ezekiel 36.25-26]- Then will I sprinkle clean water upon you, and ye shall be clean: from all your filthiness, and from all your idols, will I cleanse you. A new heart also will I give you, and a new spirit will I put within you: and I will take away the stony heart out of your flesh, and I will give you an heart of flesh.*
 3. Condemns the Enthusiasts, who, pretending to have the Spirit, lay aside the whole Bible.
 4. Condemns the slighter of Scripture.
 - a. The mighty matters of the law are to them insignificant.
 5. Condemns the abusers of Scripture.
 - a. *[2 Peter 3.16]- As also in all his epistles, speaking in them of these things; in which are some things hard to be understood, which they that are unlearned and unstable wrest, as they do also the other scriptures, unto their own destruction.*
 - b. *[Numbers 23.21]- He hath not beheld iniquity in Jacob, neither hath he seen perverseness in Israel: the LORD his God is with him, and the shout of a king is among them.*
 - c. *[John 5.40]- And ye will not come to me, that ye might have life.*
 - d. *[John 6.44]- No man can come to me, except the Father which hath sent me draw him: and I will raise him up at the last day.*
 - e. *[Matthew 25.8]- And the foolish said unto the wise, Give us of your oil; for our lamps are gone out.*
 - f. *Quos Deus vult perdere &c. "Whom God intends to destroy, He gives them leave to play with Scripture."-Martin Luther*
- E. Use 3: If the Scripture is of divine inspiration, then be exhorted.
1. To study the Scripture. It is a copy of God's Will.
 - a. *[John 5.39]- Search the scriptures; for in them ye think ye have eternal life: and they are they which testify of me.*
 - b. *[Acts 18.24]- And a certain Jew named Apollos, born at Alexandria, an eloquent man, and mighty in the scriptures, came to Ephesus.*
 - c. *[Colossians 3.16]- Let the word of Christ dwell in you richly in all wisdom; teaching and admonishing one another in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing with grace in your hearts to the Lord.*
 - d. *[Isaiah 63.1]- Who is this that cometh from Edom, with dyed garments from Bozrah? this that is glorious in his apparel, travelling in the greatness of his strength? I that speak in righteousness, mighty to save.*

- e. *[1 Timothy 1.15]- This is a faithful saying, and worthy of all acceptation, that Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners; of whom I am chief.*
 - f. *[Matthew 11.28]- Come unto me, all ye that labour and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest.*
 - g. *[James 1.18]- Of his own will begat he us with the word of truth, that we should be a kind of firstfruits of his creatures.*
 - h. *[Revelation 22.2]- In the midst of the street of it, and on either side of the river, was there the tree of life, which bare twelve manner of fruits, and yielded her fruit every month: and the leaves of the tree were for the healing of the nations.*
 - i. *[Genesis 2.17]- But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it: for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die.*
 - j. Read the Bible with reverence.
 - 1.) *[Exodus 25.14]- And thou shalt put the staves into the rings by the sides of the ark, that the ark may be borne with them.*
 - k. Read the Word with seriousness.
 - l. Read the Word with affection.
 - 1.) *[Luke 24.32]- And they said one to another, Did not our heart burn within us, while he talked with us by the way, and while he opened to us the scriptures?*
 - 2.) *[Acts 8.29]-Then the Spirit said unto Philip, Go near, and join thyself to this chariot.*
2. To prize the written Word.
- a. *[Job 23.12]- Neither have I gone back from the commandment of his lips; I have esteemed the words of his mouth more than my necessary food.*
 - b. *[Proverbs 6.23]- For the commandment is a lamp; and the law is light; and reproofs of instruction are the way of life:*
 - c. *[Psalm 65.3]- Iniquities prevail against me: as for our transgressions, thou shalt purge them away.*
 - d. *[Psalm 91.15]- He shall call upon me, and I will answer him: I will be with him in trouble; I will deliver him, and honour him.*
 - e. *[Psalm 119.104]- Through thy precepts I get understanding: therefore I hate every false way.*
 - f. *[Genesis 3.6]- And when the woman saw that the tree was good for food, and that it was pleasant to the eyes, and a tree to be desired to make one wise, she took of the fruit thereof, and did eat, and gave also unto her husband with her; and he did eat.*
 - g. *[2 Corinthians 2.11]- Lest Satan should get an advantage of us: for we are not ignorant of his devices.*
 - h. *[2 Timothy 3.15]- And that from a child thou hast known the holy scriptures, which are able to make thee wise unto salvation through faith which is in Christ Jesus.*
3. Believe it.
- a. *[Acts 28.24]- And some believed the things which were spoken, and some believed not.*
 - b. *[Isaiah 53.1]- Who hath believed our report? and to whom is the arm of the LORD revealed?*
 - c. *[Luke 16.31]- And he said unto him, If they hear not Moses and the prophets, neither will they be persuaded, though one rose from the dead.*
 - d. *[1 John 2.14]- I have written unto you, fathers, because ye have known him that is from the beginning. I have written unto you, young men, because ye are strong, and the word of God abideth in you, and ye have overcome the wicked one.*
 - e. *[2 Thessalonians 2.13]- But we are bound to give thanks alway to God for you, brethren beloved of the Lord, because God hath from the beginning chosen you to salvation through sanctification of the Spirit and belief of the truth:*
4. Love the Scripture.

- a. *[Psalm 119.97]- O how love I thy law! it is my meditation all the day.*
 - b. *"Let the holy scriptures be my chaste delight."*
 - c. *[Psalm 119.10]- With my whole heart have I sought thee: O let me not wander from thy commandments.*
 - d. *[Deuteronomy 28.5]- Blessed shall be thy basket and thy store.*
 - e. *[Proverbs 3.10]- So shall thy barns be filled with plenty, and thy presses shall burst out with new wine.*
 - f. *[Psalm 34.12]- What man is he that desireth life, and loveth many days, that he may see good?*
 - g. *[Hebrews 12.28]- Wherefore we receiving a kingdom which cannot be moved, let us have grace, whereby we may serve God acceptably with reverence and godly fear:*
 - h. *[Jeremiah 15.16]- Thy words were found, and I did eat them; and thy word was unto me the joy and rejoicing of mine heart: for I am called by thy name, O LORD God of hosts.*
5. Conform to the Word.
 - a. *[Psalm 86.11]- Teach me thy way, O LORD; I will walk in thy truth: unite my heart to fear thy name.*
 - b. *[Psalm 119.105]- Thy word is a lamp unto my feet, and a light unto my path.*
 6. Contend for Scripture.
 - a. *[Proverbs 4.13]- Take fast hold of instruction; let her not go: keep her; for she is thy life.*
 - b. *[Jude 3]- Beloved, when I gave all diligence to write unto you of the common salvation, it was needful for me to write unto you, and exhort you that ye should earnestly contend for the faith which was once delivered unto the saints.*
 7. Be thankful to God for the Scriptures.
 - a. *[2 Peter 1.18]- And this voice which came from heaven we heard, when we were with him in the holy mount.*
 8. Adore God's distinguishing grace.
 - a. *[Psalm 119.50]- This is my comfort in my affliction: for thy word hath quickened me.*

GOD AND HIS CREATION

- IV. The Being of God
 - A. What do the Scriptures principally teach?
 1. The Scriptures principally teach what man is to believe concerning God, and what duty God requires of man
 - B. What is God?
 1. God is a Spirit, infinite, eternal, and unchangeable, in His being, wisdom, power, holiness, justice, goodness, and truth.
 - a. The thing implied. There is a God.
 - 1.) *[Hebrews 11.6]- But without faith it is impossible to please him: for he that cometh to God must believe that he is, and that he is a rewarder of them that diligently seek him.*
 - 2.) By the book of nature-engraved on man's heart and demonstrated by the light of nature.
 - 3.) By His works-by creation of the glorious fabric of heaven.
 - a.) *[Job 38.4]- Where wast thou when I laid the foundations of the earth? declare, if thou hast understanding.*

- b.) *[Job 38.7]- When the morning stars sang together, and all the sons of God shouted for joy?*
 - c.) *[Acts 17.24]- God that made the world and all things therein, seeing that he is Lord of heaven and earth, dwelleth not in temples made with hands;*
 - d.) *[Psalm 139.15]- My substance was not hid from thee, when I was made in secret, and curiously wrought in the lowest parts of the earth.*
 - e.) *[Psalm 100.3]- Know ye that the Lord he is God: it is he that hath made us, and not we ourselves; we are his people, and the sheep of his pasture.*
- 4.) By our conscience, God's deputy or vice-regent.
- a.) *[Romans 2.15]- Which shew the work of the law written in their hearts, their conscience also bearing witness, and their thoughts the mean while accusing or else excusing one another;)*
- 5.) By the consent of nations, by the universal vote and suffrage of men.
- a.) *[Acts 17.23]- For as I passed by, and beheld your devotions, I found an altar with this inscription, To The Unknown God. Whom therefore ye ignorantly worship, him declare I unto you.*
- 6.) By His prediction of future things.
- a.) *[Daniel 9.26]- And after threescore and two weeks shall Messiah be cut off, but not for himself: and the people of the prince that shall come shall destroy the city and the sanctuary; and the end thereof shall be with a flood, and unto the end of the war desolations are determined.*
 - b.) *[Isaiah 45.1]- Thus saith the Lord to his anointed, to Cyrus, whose right hand I have holden, to subdue nations before him; and I will loose the loins of kings, to open before him the two leaved gates; and the gates shall not be shut;*
 - c.) *[Isaiah 41.23]- Shew the things that are to come hereafter, that we may know that ye are gods: yea, do good, or do evil, that we may be dismayed, and behold it together.*
- 7.) By His unlimited power and sovereignty.
- a.) *[Isaiah 43.13]- Yea, before the day was I am he; and there is none that can deliver out of my hand: I will work, and who shall let it?*
 - b.) *[Psalm 89.13]- Thou hast a mighty arm: strong is thy hand, and high is thy right hand.*
 - c.) *[Isaiah 44.25]- That frustrateth the tokens of the liars, and maketh diviners mad; that turneth wise men backward, and maketh their knowledge foolish;*
- 8.) There are devils; therefore there is a God.
- 9.) Use 1: Seeing there is a God, it reproves such atheistical fools as deny it.
- a.) *[John 20.13]- And they say unto her, Woman, why weepest thou? She saith unto them, Because they have taken away my LORD, and I know not where they have laid him.*-So the atheist would try and take God away from us.
 - b.) *[Psalm 14.1]- The fool hath said in his heart, There is no God. They are corrupt, they have done abominable works, there is none that doeth good.*
 - c.) *[James 2.9]- Thou believest that there is one God; thou doest well: the devils also believe, and tremble.*
 - d.) *[Titus 1.16]- They profess that they know God; but in works they deny him, being abominable, and disobedient, and unto every good work reprobate.*
 - e.) *"Verbis reliquit Deos resustulit (In his words he both denies the existence of the gods, and permits them to remain)" -Cicero on Epicurus.*

- 10.) Use 2: Seeing there is a God, He will deal righteously, and give just rewards to His men.
- a.) *[Psalm 73.3]- For I was envious at the foolish, when I saw the prosperity of the wicked.*
 - b.) *[Malachi 3.15]- And now we call the proud happy; yea, they that work wickedness are set up; yea, they that tempt God are even delivered.*
 - c.) *[Psalm 102.9]- For I have eaten ashes like bread, and mingled my drink with weeping.*
 - d.) *[Genesis 18.25]- That be far from thee to do after this manner, to slay the righteous with the wicked: and that the righteous should be as the wicked, that be far from thee: Shall not the Judge of all the earth do right?*
 - e.) *[Psalm 37.13]- The LORD shall laugh at him: for he seeth that his day is coming.*
 - f.) *[Psalm 108.11]- Wilt not thou, O God, who hast cast us off? and wilt not thou, O God, go forth with our hosts?*
- 11.) Use 3: Seeing there is a God, woe to all such as have this God against them.
- a.) *[Ezekiel 22.14]- Can thine heart endure, or can thine hands be strong, in the days that I shall deal with thee? I the LORD have spoken it, and will do it.*
 - b.) *[Deuteronomy 32.41]- If I whet my glittering sword, and mine hand take hold on judgment; I will render vengeance to mine enemies, and will reward them that hate me.*
 - c.) *[Psalm 50.22]- Now consider this, ye that forget God, lest I tear you in pieces, and there be none to deliver.*
 - d.) *[Psalm 90.11]- Who knoweth the power of thine anger? even according to thy fear, so is thy wrath.*
- 12.) Use 4: Seeing there is a God, let us believe this great article of our Creed.
- a.) *[Psalm 45.7]- Thou lovest righteousness, and hatest wickedness: therefore God, thy God, hath anointed thee with the oil of gladness above thy fellows.*
 - b.) *[Psalm 16.8]- I have set the LORD always before me: because he is at my right hand, I shall not be moved.*
 - c.) *[Genesis 17.1]- And when Abram was ninety years old and nine, the LORD appeared to Abram, and said unto him, I am the Almighty God (God all-sufficient); walk before me, and be thou perfect.*
 - d.) *[2 Kings 1.3]- But the angel of the LORD said to Elijah the Tishbite, Arise, go up to meet the messengers of the king of Samaria, and say unto them, Is it not because there is not a God in Israel, that ye go to enquire of Baalzebub the god of Ekron?*
- 13.) Use 5: Seeing there is a God, let us labor to get an interest in Him.
- a.) *[Psalm 48.14]- For this God is our God for ever and ever: he will be our guide even unto death.*
 - b.) *[Psalm 43.5]- Why art thou cast down, O my soul? and why art thou disquieted within me? hope in God: for I shall yet praise him, who is the health of my countenance, and my God.*
 - c.) *[Jeremiah 31.33]- But this shall be the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel; After those days, saith the LORD, I will put my law in their inward parts, and write it in their hearts; and will be their God, and they shall be my people.*
- 14.) Use 6: Seeing there is a God, let us serve and worship Him as God.
- a.) *[Romans 1.21]- Because that, when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened.*

- b.) *[James 5.16]- Confess your faults one to another, and pray one for another, that ye may be healed. The effectual fervent prayer of a righteous man availeth much.*
 - c.) *[Deuteronomy 6.5]- And thou shalt love the LORD thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy might.*
 - b. The thing expressed. God is Spirit.
 - 1.) *[John 4.24]- God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth.*
 - 2.) What do we mean when we say God is Spirit?
 - a.) God is an immaterial substance, of a pure, subtle, unmixed essence, not compounded of body and soul, without all extension of parts.
 - 3.) Wherein does God differ from other spirits?
 - a.) The angels are spirits.
 - 1.) Angels are spirits created, God is a Spirit uncreated.
 - 2.) Angels are finite and capable of being annihilated, but God is an Infinite Spirit.
 - 3.) Angels are confined spirits, but God is an immense Spirit.
 - 4.) Angels are but ministering spirits, but God is a super-excellent Spirit, the Father of Spirits.
 - a.) *[Hebrews 1.14]- Are they not all ministering spirits, sent forth to minister for them who shall be heirs of salvation?*
 - b.) *[Hebrews 12.9]- Furthermore we have had fathers of our flesh which corrected us, and we gave them reverence: shall we not much rather be in subjection unto the Father of spirits, and live?*
 - b.) The soul is a spirit.
 - 1.) *[Ecclesiastes 12.7]- Then shall the dust return to the earth as it was: and the spirit shall return unto God who gave it.*
 - 2.) How does God, being a Spirit, differ from the soul?
 - a.) *"Servetus and Osiander thought, that the soul being infused, conveyed into a man the very spirit and substance of God. An absurd opinion, for the essence of God is incommunicable."*
 - b.) The soul being spirit means that God has made it intelligible, and stamped upon it His likeness, not His essence.
 - 3.) But is it not said, that we are made partakers of the divine nature?
 - a.) By divine nature here, is meant divine qualities.
 - b.) *[2 Peter 1.4]- Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises: that by these ye might be partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust.*
 - c.) *"We are made partakers of the divine nature, not by identity or union with the divine essence, but by a transformation into the divine likeness"*
 - 4.) Anthropomorphites object to this, that in Scripture, a human shape and figure is given to God; He is said to have eyes and hands.
 - a.) *[Luke 24.39]- Behold my hands and my feet, that it is I myself: handle me, and see; for a spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye see me have.*
 - b.) *"Body parts are ascribed to God, not properly, but metaphorically, and in a borrowed sense."*
 - c.) The body is visible, but God is invisible; therefore is a Spirit.
 - 1.) *[1 Timothy 6.16]- Who only hath immortality, dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto; whom no man hath seen, nor can see: to whom be honour and power everlasting. Amen.*

- d.) The body is terminated, and can be in one place at a time, but God is everywhere, in all places at once; therefore He is a Spirit.
 - 1.) ***[Psalm 139.7-8]- Whither shall I go from thy spirit? or whither shall I flee from thy presence? If I ascend up into heaven, thou art there: if I make my bed in hell, behold, thou art there.***
 - e.) A body being compounded of integral parts may be dissolved, but the Godhead is not capable of dissolution.
- 4.) Use 1: If God is a Spirit, then He is Impassable and not capable of being hurt.
- a.) ***[Acts 5.39]- But if it be of God, ye cannot overthrow it; lest haply ye be found even to fight against God.***
 - b.) ***[Nahum 1.9]- What do ye imagine against the Lord? he will make an utter end: affliction shall not rise up the second time.***
 - c.) ***[Psalm 2.2-4]- The kings of the earth set themselves, and the rulers take counsel together, against the Lord, and against his anointed, saying, Let us break their bands asunder, and cast away their cords from us. He that sitteth in the heavens shall laugh: the Lord shall have them in derision.***
- 5.) Use 2: If God is a Spirit, it shows the folly of the papists, who worship him in pictures and images.
- a.) ***[Deuteronomy 4.12]- And the Lord spake unto you out of the midst of the fire: ye heard the voice of the words, but saw no similitude; only ye heard a voice.***
 - b.) ***[Isaiah 40.18]- To whom then will ye liken God? or what likeness will ye compare unto him?***
 - c.) ***Are not the angels in Scripture represented by the cherubim?***
 - 1.) ***"The cherubims did not represent the persons of the angels, but their office."***
 - d.) ***[Jeremiah 23.24]- Can any hide himself in secret places that I shall not see him? saith the Lord. Do not I fill heaven and earth? saith the Lord.***
 - e.) ***How then shall we conceive of God as a Spirit, if we may make no image or resemblance of Him?***
 - 1.) ***We must conceive of Him spiritually in his attributes, in His attributes, His holiness, justice and goodness.***
 - 2.) ***We must conceive of Him as He is in Christ.***
 - 3.) ***[Colossians 1.15]- Who is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn of every creature:***
 - 4.) ***[John 14.9]- Jesus saith unto him, Have I been so long time with you, and yet hast thou not known me, Philip? he that hath seen me hath seen the Father; and how sayest thou then, Show us the Father?***
- 6.) Use 3: If God is a Spirit, it shows us, that the more spiritual we grow, the more we grow like to God.
- a.) What is it to be spiritual?
 - 1.) ***[Psalm 73.25]- Whom have I in heaven but thee? and there is none upon earth that I desire beside thee.***
 - 2.) ***"Apage terra, utinam tecamin coelo essem! - Begone earth! Oh that I were in Heaven with Thee!"- Beza***
- 7.) Use 4: It shows that the worship, which God requires of us, and is most acceptable to Him, is spiritual worship.
- a.) ***[John 4.24]- God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth.***

- b.) *[1 Corinthians 6.20]- For ye are bought with a price: therefore glorify God in your body, and in your spirit, which are God's.*
- c.) What is it to worship in the spirit?
 - 1.) Without ceremonies.
 - a.) *[Hebrews 9.19]- For when Moses had spoken every precept to all the people according to the law, he took the blood of calves and of goats, with water, and scarlet wool, and hyssop, and sprinkled both the book, and all the people,*
 - 2.) With faith in the blood of the Messiah.
 - a.) *[Hebrews 10.19]- Having therefore, brethren, boldness to enter into the holiest by the blood of Jesus,*
 - 3.) With utmost zeal and intenseness of soul.
 - a.) *[Acts 26.7]- Unto which promise our twelve tribes, instantly serving God day and night, hope to come. For which hope's sake, king Agrippa, I am accused of the Jews.*
 - 4.) *[Ephesians 5.19]- Speaking to yourselves in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing and making melody in your heart to the Lord;*
 - 5.) *[Romans 8.26]- Likewise the Spirit also helpeth our infirmities: for we know not what we should pray for as we ought: but the Spirit itself maketh intercession for us with groanings which cannot be uttered.*
 - 6.) *[John 4.23]- But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeketh such to worship him.*
 - 7.) *[Isaiah 1.12]- When ye come to appear before me, who hath required this at your hand, to tread my courts?*
 - 8.) *[Ezekiel 33.31]- And they come unto thee as the people cometh, and they sit before thee as my people, and they hear thy words, but they will not do them: for with their mouth they shew much love, but their heart goeth after their covetousness.*
 - 9.) *[Luke 18.13]- And the publican, standing afar off, would not lift up so much as his eyes unto heaven, but smote upon his breast, saying, God be merciful to me a sinner.*
- 8.) Use 5: Let us pray to God, that as He is Spirit, so He will give us His Spirit.
 - a.) *"When the sun shines in a room, not the body of the sun is there, but the light, heat, and influence of the sun."*
 - b.) *[Ezekiel 36.27]- And I will put my spirit within you, and cause you to walk in my statutes, and ye shall keep my judgments, and do them.*
 - c.) Turn promises into prayers.
 - d.) *[Malachi 2.15]- And did not he make one? Yet had he the residue of the spirit. And wherefore one? That he might seek a godly seed. Therefore take heed to your spirit, and let none deal treacherously against the wife of his youth.*
- 9.) Use 6: As God is a Spirit, so the rewards that he gives are spiritual.
 - a.) *[Ephesians 1.3]- Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ:*
 - b.) *[1 Peter 5.4]- And when the chief Shepherd shall appear, ye shall receive a crown of glory that fadeth not away.*
- c. What kind of Spirit is God?
 - 1.) He is infinite-omnipresent.

- a.) *[1 Kings 8.27]- But will God indeed dwell on the earth? behold, the heaven and heaven of heavens cannot contain thee; how much less this house that I have builded?*
- b.) *[Ezekiel 10.16]- And when the cherubims went, the wheels went by them: and when the cherubims lifted up their wings to mount up from the earth, the same wheels also turned not from beside them.*
- c.) *[Isaiah 40.22]- It is he that sitteth upon the circle of the earth, and the inhabitants thereof are as grasshoppers; that stretcheth out the heavens as a curtain, and spreadeth them out as a tent to dwell in:*
- d.) *[Jeremiah 23.24]- Can any hide himself in secret places that I shall not see him? saith the LORD. Do not I fill heaven and earth? saith the LORD.*
- e.) *But does not God say heaven is His throne?*
 - 1.) *[Isaiah 66.1]- Thus saith the LORD, The heaven is my throne, and the earth is my footstool: where is the house that ye build unto me? and where is the place of my rest?*
 - 2.) *[Isaiah 57.15]- For thus saith the high and lofty One that inhabiteth eternity, whose name is Holy; I dwell in the high and holy place, with him also that is of a contrite and humble spirit, to revive the spirit of the humble, and to revive the heart of the contrite ones.*
- f.) But if God be infinite in all places, He is in impure places, and mingles with impurity.
 - 1.) God is in all places, in the heart of a sinner by His inspection, and in Hell in justice.
 - 2.) He does not mingle with the impurity or receive the least tincture of evil.
 - 3.) *“Divina natura non est immista rebus aut sordibus inquinata- The divine nature does not intermix with created matter, nor is contaminated by its impurities.” - Augustine*
- g.) God infinite in all places at once, not only in regard to the simplicity and purity of his nature, but in regard to His power.
- h.) Use 1: If God be infinite, then it condemns the Papists, who would make more things infinite than the Godhead. i.e. transubstantiation.
 - 1.) *[Hebrews 10.5]- Wherefore when he cometh into the world, he saith, Sacrifice and offering thou wouldest not, but a body hast thou prepared me:*
- i.) Use 2: If God be infinite, then it is certain He governs all things in His person and needs no proxies and deputies.
- j.) Use 3: If God be infinite by His omnipresence, then see the greatness and immenseness of the divine majesty!
 - 1.) *[1 Chronicles 29.11]- Thine, O Lord is the greatness, and the power, and the glory, and the victory, and the majesty: for all that is in the heaven and in the earth is thine; thine is the kingdom, O Lord, and thou art exalted as head above all.*
 - 2.) *[Nehemiah 9.5]- Then the Levites, Jeshua, and Kadmiel, Bani, Hashabniah, Sherebiah, Hodijah, Shebaniah, and Pethahiah, said, Stand up and bless the Lord your God for ever and ever: and blessed be thy glorious name, which is exalted above all blessing and praise.*
 - 3.) *[Isaiah 40.15]- Behold, the nations are as a drop of a bucket, and are counted as the small dust of the balance: behold, he taketh up the isles as a very little thing.*
 - 4.) *[Psalm 150.2]- Praise him for his mighty acts: praise him according to his excellent greatness.*

- k.) Use 4: If God be infinite, see what a full portion the saints have.
- 1.) *[Ephesians 3.8]- Unto me, who am less than the least of all saints, is this grace given, that I should preach among the Gentiles the unsearchable riches of Christ;*
 - 2.) *[Ephesians 3.20]- Now unto him that is able to do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think, according to the power that worketh in us,*
 - 3.) *[Psalm 16.5-6]- The Lord is the portion of mine inheritance and of my cup: thou maintainest my lot. The lines are fallen unto me in pleasant places; yea, I have a goodly heritage.*
 - 4.) *[Genesis 33.11]- Take, I pray thee, my blessing that is brought to thee; because God hath dealt graciously with me, and because I have enough. And he urged him, and he took it.*
- l.) Use 5: If God be infinite is everywhere present.
- 1.) *[Psalm 21.8] - Thine hand shall find out all thine enemies: thy right hand shall find out those that hate thee.*
 - 2.) *[Psalm 139.7]- Whither shall I go from thy spirit? or whither shall I flee from thy presence?*
 - 3.) *But is it not said, Cain went out from the presence of the Lord? Genesis 4.16*
a.) Cain went out from the church of God, where the visible signs of God's presence were but Cain could not go out of God's sight.
- m.) Use 6: If God be everywhere present, then for a Christian to walk with God is not impossible.
- 1.) *[Isaiah 65.1]- I am sought of them that asked not for me; I am found of them that sought me not: I said, Behold me, behold me, unto a nation that was not called by my name.*
 - 2.) *[Genesis 5.22]- And Enoch walked with God after he begat Methuselah three hundred years, and begat sons and daughters:*
 - 3.) *[Acts 17.27]- That they should seek the Lord, if haply they might feel after him, and find him, though he be not far from every one of us:*
 - 4.) *[Psalm 82.1]- God standeth in the congregation of the mighty; he judgeth among the gods.*
 - 5.) *[Hebrews 10.22]- Let us draw near with a true heart in full assurance of faith, having our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience, and our bodies washed with pure water.*
 - 6.) *[Hebrews 11.27]- By faith he forsook Egypt, not fearing the wrath of the king: for he endured, as seeing him who is invisible.*
 - 7.) *[1 John 1.3]- That which we have seen and heard declare we unto you, that ye also may have fellowship with us: and truly our fellowship is with the Father, and with his Son Jesus Christ.*
 - 8.) *[Psalm 89.15]- Blessed is the people that know the joyful sound: they shall walk, O LORD, in the light of thy countenance.*
- n.) Use 7: If God be infinite in His glorious essence, learn to admire where you cannot fathom.
- 1.) *[Isaiah 6.2]- Above it stood the seraphims: each one had six wings; with twain he covered his face, and with twain he covered his feet, and with twain he did fly.*
 - 2.) *[Job 11.7]- Canst thou by searching find out God? canst thou find out the Almighty unto perfection?*
 - 3.) *[Ecclesiastes 11.5]- As thou knowest not what is the way of the spirit, nor how the bones do grow in the womb of her that is with child: even so thou knowest not the works of God who maketh all.*

- 4.) *[Psalm 78.41]- Yea, they turned back and tempted God, and limited the Holy One of Israel.*
- 5.) *[Romans 11.33]- O the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of God! how unsearchable are his judgments, and his ways past finding out!*

V. The Knowledge of God.

A. The God of Knowledge

1. *[1 Samuel 2.3]- Talk no more so exceeding proudly; let not arrogancy come out of your mouth: for the LORD is a God of knowledge, and by him actions are weighed.*
2. *[Revelation 2.23]- And I will kill her children with death; and all the churches shall know that I am he which searcheth the reins and hearts: and I will give unto every one of you according to your works.*
3. *[Psalm 139.12]- Yea, the darkness hideth not from thee; but the night shineth as the day: the darkness and the light are both alike to thee.*
4. *[Psalm 139.4]- For there is not a word in my tongue, but, lo, O LORD, thou knowest it altogether.*
5. *[Isaiah 66.18]- For I know their works and their thoughts: it shall come, that I will gather all nations and tongues; and they shall come, and see my glory.*
6. *[Joshua 7.21]- When I saw among the spoils a goodly Babylonish garment, and two hundred shekels of silver, and a wedge of gold of fifty shekels weight, then I coveted them, and took them; and, behold, they are hid in the earth in the midst of my tent, and the silver under it.*
7. *[Job 37.16]- Dost thou know the balancings of the clouds, the wondrous works of him which is perfect in knowledge?*
8. *[Isaiah 41.23]- Shew the things that are to come hereafter, that we may know that ye are gods: yea, do good, or do evil, that we may be dismayed, and behold it together.*

B. Characteristics of God's knowledge

1. God's knowledge is perfect and primary.
2. God's knowledge is pure. Though God knows sin, it is only to hate and punish it. No evil can mix or incorporate with His knowledge.
3. God's knowledge is facile and without any difficulty.
4. God's knowledge is infinitely bright and all things are intelligible to Him.
 - a. *[Proverbs 2.4]- If thou seekest her as silver, and searchest for her as for hid treasures;*
5. God's knowledge is infallible.
6. God's knowledge is retentive. He has *reminiscentia*, as well as *intelligentia*. He remembers as well as understands.
7. *[Genesis 18.21]- I will go down now, and see whether they have done altogether according to the cry of it, which is come unto me; and if not, I will know.*
 - a. God's manner as a judge, first examining the cause before passing the sentence.
 - b. *[Isaiah 28.17]- Judgment also will I lay to the line, and righteousness to the plummet: and the hail shall sweep away the refuge of lies, and the waters shall overflow the hiding place.*
8. *[Hosea 13.12]- The iniquity of Ephraim is bound up; his sin is hid.*
 - a. His sin not hid from God but recorded and laid up against the day of reckoning.
 - b. *[Psalm 94.9]- He that planted the ear, shall he not hear? He that formed the eye, shall he not see?*
 - c. *[Genesis 18.25]- That be far from thee to do after this manner, to slay the righteous with the wicked: and that the righteous should be as the wicked, that be far from thee: Shall not the Judge of all the earth do right?*

- C. Use 1: Is God infinite in knowledge? Is He light and in Him is no darkness? Then how unlike are they to God who are darkness, and in whom is no light?
1. The ignorant cannot give God reasonable service.
 - a. *[Romans 12.1]- I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, which is your reasonable service.*
 - b. *"Ignorance is the nursery of impiety."*
 - c. *"Omne peccatum fundatur in ignorantia"* Every sin is founded upon ignorance.
 2. *[Jeremiah 9.3]- And they bend their tongues like their bow for lies: but they are not valiant for the truth upon the earth; for they proceed from evil to evil, and they know not me, saith the LORD.*
 3. *[Proverbs 19.2]- Also, that the soul be without knowledge, it is not good; and he that hasteth with his feet sinneth.*
 4. *[Psalm 9.10]- And they that know thy name will put their trust in thee: for thou, LORD, hast not forsaken them that seek thee.*
- D. Use 2: If God were a God of knowledge, then see the folly of hypocrisy.
1. Hypocrites do not *virtutem facere*, but *fingere*. *"Hypocrites do not actually do good, they merely make a show of it."* – Melanthon
 2. *[Psalm 73.11]- And they say, How doth God know? and is there knowledge in the most High?*
 3. *[Psalm 10.11]- He hath said in his heart, God hath forgotten: he hideth his face; he will never see it.*
 4. *[Psalm 147.5]- Great is our Lord, and of great power: his understanding is infinite.*
 5. *[Matthew 6.4]- That thine alms may be in secret: and thy Father which seeth in secret himself shall reward thee openly.*
 6. *[1 Kings 14.6]- And it was so, when Ahijah heard the sound of her feet, as she came in at the door, that he said, Come in, thou wife of Jeroboam; why feignest thou thyself to be another? for I am sent to thee with heavy tidings.*
 7. *[Ecclesiastes 12.14]- For God shall bring every work into judgment, with every secret thing, whether it be good, or whether it be evil.*
 8. *[Jeremiah 29.23]- Because they have committed villany in Israel, and have committed adultery with their neighbours' wives, and have spoken lying words in my name, which I have not commanded them; even I know, and am a witness, saith the LORD.*
 9. *[John 12.5]- Why was not this ointment sold for three hundred pence, and given to the poor?*
 10. *[Jeremiah 16.17]- For mine eyes are upon all their ways: they are not hid from my face, neither is their iniquity hid from mine eyes.*
- E. Use 3: Is God so infinite in knowledge? Then we should always feel as under His omniscient eye.
1. *Sic vivendum est tanquam in conspectu.* "Hence we ought to live as if always in full view." – Seneca
 - a. *[Psalm 16.8]- I have set the LORD always before me: because he is at my right hand, I shall not be moved.*
 2. *God's omnipresence would be preventative of much sin. The eye of man will restrain from sin; and will not God's eyes much more?*
 - a. *[Esther 7.8]- Then the king returned out of the palace garden into the place of the banquet of wine; and Haman was fallen upon the bed whereon Esther was. Then said the king, Will he force the queen also before me in the house? As the word went out of king's mouth, they covered Haman's face.*
 3. Would men go after strange flesh if they believed God was a spectator of their wickedness?
 4. Would they defraud in their dealings, and use false weights?

5. Viewing ourselves as under the eye of God's omniscience would cause reverence in the worship of God.
 - a. How would this call in our straggling thoughts?
 - b. How would it animate and spirit duty?
 - c. *[Acts 26.7]- Unto which promise our twelve tribes, instantly serving God day and night, hope to come. For which hope's sake, king Agrippa, I am accused of the Jews.*
- F. Use 4: Is God's knowledge infinite? Study sincerity, be what you seem.
1. *[1 Samuel 16.7]- But the LORD said unto Samuel, Look not on his countenance, or on the height of his stature; because I have refused him: for the LORD seeth not as man seeth; for man looketh on the outward appearance, but the LORD looketh on the heart.*
 2. *Men judge the heart by the actions, God judges the actions by the heart; if the heart be sincere, God will see the faith and bear with the failing.*
 3. *[2 Chronicles 15.17]- But the high places were not taken away out of Israel: nevertheless the heart of Asa was perfect all his days.*
 4. *[2 Kings 10.15]- And when he was departed thence, he lighted on Jehonadab the son of Rechab coming to meet him: and he saluted him, and said to him, Is thine heart right, as my heart is with thy heart? And Jehonadab answered, It is. If it be, give me thine hand. And he gave him his hand; and he took him up to him into the chariot.*
- G. Use 5: Is God a God of infinite knowledge? Then there is comfort.
1. To the saints in particular.
 - a. Private devotion.
 - 1.) *[Malachi 3.16]- Then they that feared the LORD spake often one to another: and the LORD hearkened, and heard it, and a book of remembrance was written before him for them that feared the LORD, and that thought upon his name.*
 - b. Prayer closet.
 - 1.) *[Psalm 38.9]- Lord, all my desire is before thee; and my groaning is not hid from thee.*
 - 2.) *[Psalm 56.8]- Thou tellest my wanderings: put thou my tears into thy bottle: are they not in thy book?*
 - 3.) *[1 Corinthians 4.5]- Therefore judge nothing before the time, until the Lord come, who both will bring to light the hidden things of darkness, and will make manifest the counsels of the hearts: and then shall every man have praise of God.*
 - c. Mortification of sin.
 - d. Developing gifts and graces.
 - 1.) *[Genesis 25.22]- And the children struggled together within her; and she said, If it be so, why am I thus? And she went to enquire of the LORD.*
 - 2.) *[1 Kings 14.13]- And all Israel shall mourn for him, and bury him: for he only of Jeroboam shall come to the grave, because in him there is found some good thing toward the LORD God of Israel in the house of Jeroboam.*
 - e. Bearing personal injuries.
 - 1.) *[2 Corinthians 11.25]- Thrice was I beaten with rods, once was I stoned, thrice I suffered shipwreck, a night and a day I have been in the deep;*
 - 2.) *[Exodus 3.7]- And the LORD said, I have surely seen the affliction of my people which are in Egypt, and have heard their cry by reason of their taskmasters; for I know their sorrows;*
 2. To the church in general.
 - a. God sees all plots of the enemies of Zion in all their subtleties.

- 1.) *[Revelation 12.3]- And there appeared another wonder in heaven; and behold a great red dragon, having seven heads and ten horns, and seven crowns upon his heads.*
- 2.) *[Zechariah 3.9]- For behold the stone that I have laid before Joshua; upon one stone shall be seven eyes: behold, I will engrave the graving thereof, saith the LORD of hosts, and I will remove the iniquity of that land in one day.*
- 3.) *[Exodus 1.10]- Come on, let us deal wisely with them; lest they multiply, and it come to pass, that, when there falleth out any war, they join also unto our enemies, and fight against us, and so get them up out of the land.*
- 4.) *[Exodus 14.24]- And it came to pass, that in the morning watch the LORD looked unto the host of the Egyptians through the pillar of fire and of the cloud, and troubled the host of the Egyptians,*

VI. The Eternity of God.

A. Proof text

1. *[Psalm 90.2]- Before the mountains were brought forth, or ever thou hadst formed the earth and the world, even from everlasting to everlasting, thou art God.*

B. A Threefold Being.

1. Such as had a beginning; and shall have an end; as all sensitive creatures
2. Such as had a beginning; but shall have no end, as angels and the souls of men.
3. Such as is without beginning, and without ending, and that is proper only to God.

C. God's names and titles linked to His eternity.

1. *Semper existens*-from everlasting to everlasting.
2. The King Eternal.
 - a. *[1 Timothy 1.17]- Now unto the King eternal, immortal, invisible, the only wise God, be honour and glory for ever and ever. Amen.*
3. Jehovah-"I am that I am," or "I am the one who is."
 - a. The Jews trembled at the name and used *Adonai*, Lord instead.
 - b. It contains in it time past, present and to come.
 - c. *[Revelation 1.8]- I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending, saith the Lord, which is, and which was, and which is to come, the Almighty.*
 - d. *[Hebrews 1.8]- But unto the Son he saith, Thy throne, O God, is for ever and ever: a sceptre of righteousness is the sceptre of thy kingdom.*
 - e. *[Exodus 3.14]- And God said unto Moses, I AM THAT I AM: and he said, Thus shalt thou say unto the children of Israel, I AM hath sent me unto you.*

D. Use 1: Here is thunder and lightning to the wicked. God is eternal, therefore the torments of the wicked are eternal.

1. *[Daniel 5.6]- Then the king's countenance was changed, and his thoughts troubled him, so that the joints of his loins were loosed, and his knees smote one against another.*
2. *[Ephesians 4.19]- Who being past feeling have given themselves over unto lasciviousness, to work all uncleanness with greediness.*
3. Three things to make sinners tremble. The torments of the damned are without intermission, without mixture and eternal.
 - a. Without intermission.
 - 1.) *[Revelation 14.11]- And the smoke of their torment ascendeth up for ever and ever: and they have no rest day nor night, who worship the beast and his image, and whosoever receiveth the mark of his name.*
 - 2.) *[Isaiah 30.33]- For Tophet is ordained of old; yea, for the king it is prepared; he hath made it deep and large: the pile thereof is fire and much wood; the breath of the LORD, like a stream of brimstone, doth kindle it.*

- b. Without mixture. In this life, God in anger remembers mercy, he mixes compassion with suffering.
 - 1.) *[Deuteronomy 33.24-25]- And of Asher he said, Let Asher be blessed with children; let him be acceptable to his brethren, and let him dip his foot in oil. Thy shoes shall be iron and brass; and as thy days, so shall thy strength be.*
 - 2.) *[Revelation 14.10]- The same shall drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is poured out without mixture into the cup of his indignation; and he shall be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of the holy angels, and in the presence of the Lamb:*
 - 3.) *[Psalm 125.8]- For in the hand of the LORD there is a cup, and the wine is red; it is full of mixture; and he poureth out of the same: but the dregs thereof, all the wicked of the earth shall wring them out, and drink them.*
 - 4.) *[Numbers 5.15]- Then shall the man bring his wife unto the priest, and he shall bring her offering for her, the tenth part of an ephah of barley meal; he shall pour no oil upon it, nor put frankincense thereon; for it is an offering of jealousy, an offering of memorial, bringing iniquity to remembrance.*
- c. Without cessation. Eternal.
 - 1.) *[Revelation 14.11]- And the smoke of their torment ascendeth up for ever and ever: and they have no rest day nor night, who worship the beast and his image, and whosoever receiveth the mark of his name.*
 - 2.) *[Revelation 9.6]- And in those days shall men seek death, and shall not find it; and shall desire to die, and death shall flee from them.*
 - 3.) *[Isaiah 30.33]- For Tophet is ordained of old; yea, for the king it is prepared; he hath made it deep and large: the pile thereof is fire and much wood; the breath of the LORD, like a stream of brimstone, doth kindle it.*
4. Why should sin that is committed in a short time be punished eternally?
 - a. "God's judgements on the wicked, *occult esse possunt, injusta esse non possunt*, may be secret, but never just."-Augustine
 - b. Because every sin is committed against an infinite essence, and no less that eternity of punishment can satisfy.
- E. Use 2: Of comfort to the godly. God is eternal, therefore He lives forever to reward the godly.
 1. *[Romans 2.7]- To them who by patient continuance in well doing seek for glory and honour and immortality, eternal life:*
 2. *[Acts 20.23]- Save that the Holy Ghost witnesseth in every city, saying that bonds and afflictions abide me.*
 3. *[1 John 3.15]- Whosoever hateth his brother is a murderer: and ye know that no murderer hath eternal life abiding in him.*
 4. *[2 Corinthians 4.17]- For our light affliction, which is but for a moment, worketh for us a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory;*
 5. *[Psalm 16.11]- Thou wilt shew me the path of life: in thy presence is fulness of joy; at thy right hand there are pleasures for evermore.*
 6. *[1 Thessalonians 4.17]- Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord.*
 7. "Romans emperors have three crowns set upon their heads, the first of iron, the second of silver, the third of gold; so the Lord sets three crowns on his children, grace, comfort, and glory; and this crown is eternal."
 8. *[1 Peter 5.4]- And when the chief Shepherd shall appear, ye shall receive a crown of glory that fadeth not away.*
- F. Use 3: Of exhortation. Study eternity.

1. God's eternity.
 - a. *[Daniel 7.9]- I beheld till the thrones were cast down, and the Ancient of days did sit, whose garment was white as snow, and the hair of his head like the pure wool: his throne was like the fiery flame, and his wheels as burning fire.*
 - b. "Thoughts of God's eternity should make us have high, adoring thoughts of God. We are apt to have mean, irreverent thoughts of Him."
 - 1.) *[Psalm 50.21]- These things hast thou done, and I kept silence; thou thoughtest that I was altogether such an one as thyself: but I will reprove thee, and set them in order before thine eyes.*
 - 2.) *[Revelation 4.10]- The four and twenty elders fall down before him that sat on the throne, and worship him that liveth for ever and ever, and cast their crowns before the throne, saying, Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honour and power: for thou hast created all things, and for thy pleasure they are and were created.*
 - c. It will make us adore where we cannot fathom.
2. The soul's eternity. "Which of these two eternities is like to be thy portion?"
 - a. Thoughts of eternal torments are a good antidote against sin.
 - 1.) *[Revelation 9.7]- And the shapes of the locusts were like unto horses prepared unto battle; and on their heads were as it were crowns like gold, and their faces were as the faces of men.*
 - b. Serious thoughts of eternal happiness would very much take us off from worldly things.
 - c. Serious thoughts of an eternal state, either of happiness or misery, should have a powerful influence upon whatsoever we take in hand.

VII. The Unchangeableness of God.

A. God is unchangeable in His nature.

1. *[Malachi 3.6]- For I am the LORD, I change not; therefore ye sons of Jacob are not consumed.*
2. No eclipse of His brightness.
 - a. *[James 1.17]- Every good gift and every perfect gift is from above, and cometh down from the Father of lights, with whom is no variableness, neither shadow of turning.*
 - b. *[Psalm 52.7]- Lo, this is the man that made not God his strength; but trusted in the abundance of his riches, and strengthened himself in his wickedness.*
 - c. *[Psalm 52.26]- They shall perish, but thou shalt endure: yea, all of them shall wax old like a garment; as a vesture shalt thou change them, and they shall be changed:*
 - d. *[2 Peter 3.12]- Looking for and hasting unto the coming of the day of God, wherein the heavens being on fire shall be dissolved, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat?*
 - e. "A Christian has his anguish fits in religion. Sometimes his faith is at high tide, sometimes low ebb..."
 - 1.) *[2 Samuel 22.3]- The God of my rock; in him will I trust: he is my shield, and the horn of my salvation, my high tower, and my refuge, my saviour; thou savest me from violence.*
 - 2.) *[1 Samuel 27.1]- And David said in his heart, I shall now perish one day by the hand of Saul: there is nothing better for me than that I should speedily escape into the land of the Philistines; and Saul shall despair of me, to seek me any more in any coast of Israel: so shall I escape out of his hand.*
 - f. *[Jude 6]- And the angels which kept not their first estate, but left their own habitation, he hath reserved in everlasting chains under darkness unto the judgment of the great day.*
 - g. But when Christ, Who is God, assumed the human nature, there was a change in God.
 - 1.) "The human nature was distinct from the divine nature."

- 2.) *"A cloud over the sun makes no change in the body of the sun."*
 - 3.) *"The divine nature was covered with the human."*
3. No period put to His being.
 - a. *[1 Timothy 6.16]- Who only hath immortality, dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto; whom no man hath seen, nor can see: to whom be honour and power everlasting. Amen.*
 - b. Use 1: See the excellence of the divine nature in its immutability.
 - 1.) *[Hebrews 13.8]- Jesus Christ the same yesterday, and to day, and for ever.*
 - 2.) *[Genesis 49.4]- Unstable as water, thou shalt not excel; because thou wentest up to thy father's bed; then defiledst thou it: he went up to my couch.*
 - 3.) *[Jude 13]- Raging waves of the sea, foaming out their own shame; wandering stars, to whom is reserved the blackness of darkness for ever.*
 - c. Use 2: See the vanity of the creature.
 - 1.) *[Psalm 62.9]- Surely men of low degree are vanity, and men of high degree are a lie: to be laid in the balance, they are altogether lighter than vanity.*
 - d. Use 3: Comfort to the Godly.
 - 1.) In losses.
 - a.) *[Habakkuk 3.18]- Yet I will rejoice in the LORD, I will joy in the God of my salvation.*
 - b.) *[Psalm 73.26]- My flesh and my heart faileth: but God is the strength of my heart, and my portion for ever.*
 - 2.) In sadness of spirit.
 - a.) *[Song of Solomon 5.6]- I opened to my beloved; but my beloved had withdrawn himself, and was gone: my soul failed when he spake: I sought him, but I could not find him; I called him, but he gave me no answer.*
 - b.) *[Jeremiah 31.3]- The LORD hath appeared of old unto me, saying, Yea, I have loved thee with an everlasting love: therefore with lovingkindness have I drawn thee.*
 - c.) *[Isaiah 54.10]- For the mountains shall depart, and the hills be removed; but my kindness shall not depart from thee, neither shall the covenant of my peace be removed, saith the LORD that hath mercy on thee.*
 - e. Use 4: Of exhortation. Get an interest in the unchangeable God, and then thou art as a rock in the sea, immoveable in the midst of all changes.
 - 1.) *How shall I get a part in the unchangeable God?*
 - a.) *[1 Corinthians 6.11]- And such were some of you: but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God.*
 - b.) *[Isaiah 2.22]- Cease ye from man, whose breath is in his nostrils: for wherein is he to be accounted of?*
 - c.) *[Hebrews 13.5]- Let your conversation be without covetousness; and be content with such things as ye have: for he hath said, I will never leave thee, nor forsake thee.*
 - d.) *"God is jealous of two things; of our love, and our trust."*
 - e.) *[Psalm 125.1]- They that trust in the LORD shall be as mount Zion, which cannot be removed, but abideth for ever.*
- B. God is unchangeable in His decree.
 1. *[Isaiah 46.10]- Declaring the end from the beginning, and from ancient times the things that are not yet done, saying, My counsel shall stand, and I will do all my pleasure:*

2. *But is not God said to repent?*
 - a. *[Jonah 3.10]- And God saw their works, that they turned from their evil way; and God repented of the evil, that he had said that he would do unto them; and he did it not.*
 - b. *[Numbers 23.19]- God is not a man, that he should lie; neither the son of man, that he should repent: hath he said, and shall he not do it? or hath he spoken, and shall he not make it good?*
 - c. *"There may be a change in God's work, but not His will."*
 - d. *"God changes His sentence, but not His decree."*
3. *"To what purpose should we use the means? Our endeavors towards salvation cannot alter His decree."*
 - a. *God not only decreed salvation, also decreed it in the use of the means primarily of the Word and prayer.*
 - b. *[Romans 9.23]- And that he might make known the riches of his glory on the vessels of mercy, which he had afore prepared unto glory,*
4. Use 1: God does not elect upon our faith foreseen, as the Arminians maintain.
 - a. *[Romans 9.11,13]- (For the children being not yet born, neither having done any good or evil, that the purpose of God according to election might stand, not of works, but of him that calleth;) As it is written, Jacob have I loved, but Esau have I hated.*
 - b. *[Ephesians 1.4]- According as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love:*
 - c. *[Acts 13.48]- And when the Gentiles heard this, they were glad, and glorified the word of the Lord: and as many as were ordained to eternal life believed.*
5. Use 2: If God's decree is unchangeable, it gives comfort in two cases.
 - a. Concerning God's providence towards His church.
 - 1.) God's work goes on, and nothing falls out but what he has decreed from eternity.
 - b. God has decreed troubles for the church's good.
 - 1.) *[John 5.4]- For an angel went down at a certain season into the pool, and troubled the water: whosoever then first after the troubling of the water stepped in was made whole of whatsoever disease he had.*
 - 2.) *[Isaiah 31.9]- And he shall pass over to his strong hold for fear, and his princes shall be afraid of the ensign, saith the LORD, whose fire is in Zion, and his furnace in Jerusalem.*
 - 3.) *[Daniel 12.10]- Many shall be purified, and made white, and tried; but the wicked shall do wickedly: and none of the wicked shall understand; but the wise shall understand.*
6. Use 3: Comfort to the godly in regard to their salvation.
 - a. *[2 Timothy 2.19]- Nevertheless the foundation of God standeth sure, having this seal, The Lord knoweth them that are his. And, let every one that nameth the name of Christ depart from iniquity.*
 - b. *[Revelation 3.5]- He that overcometh, the same shall be clothed in white raiment; and I will not blot out his name out of the book of life, but I will confess his name before my Father, and before his angels.*
 - c. *[Hosea 13.14]- I will ransom them from the power of the grave; I will redeem them from death: O death, I will be thy plagues; O grave, I will be thy destruction: repentance shall be hid from mine eyes.*
 - d. *[John 13.1]- Now before the feast of the passover, when Jesus knew that his hour was come that he should depart out of this world unto the Father, having loved his own which were in the world, he loved them unto the end.*

7. Use 4: To the wicked, who march furiously against God and His people, let them know that God's decree is unchangeable.
 - a. There is a two-fold will of God, *Voluntas Praecepti et decreti*, 'the will of God's precept, and of His decree.'
 - b. *"Judas betrays Christ, Pilate condemns Him, that soldiers crucify Him; while they resist the will of God's precept, they fulfill the will of His permissive decree."*
 - c. **[Acts 4.28]- For to do whatsoever thy hand and thy counsel determined before to be done.**

VIII. The Wisdom of God.

A. One of the brightest beams of the Godhead.

1. **[Job 9.4]- He is wise in heart, and mighty in strength: who hath hardened himself against him, and hath prospered?**
2. *The heart is the seat of wisdom.*
3. *"Cor in Hebraeo sumitur pro judicio. Among the Hebrews, the heart is put for wisdom."*
4. **[Job 34.34]- Let men of understanding (heart) tell me, and let a wise man hearken unto me.**
5. **[1 Timothy 1.17]- Now unto the King eternal, immortal, invisible, the only wise God, be honour and glory for ever and ever. Amen.**
6. **[Matthew 5.48]- Be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect.**

B. God's wisdom seen.

1. His infinite intelligence.
 - a. **[Daniel 2.28]- But there is a God in heaven that revealeth secrets, and maketh known to the king Nebuchadnezzar what shall be in the latter days. Thy dream, and the visions of thy head upon thy bed, are these;**
 - b. **[Amos 4.13]- For, lo, he that formeth the mountains, and createth the wind, and declareth unto man what is his thought, that maketh the morning darkness, and treadeth upon the high places of the earth, The LORD, The God of hosts, is his name.**
 - c. *"God will put off all masks and disguises, and make a heart-anatomy."*
 - d. *"He knows all future contingencies, et ante intuita-and already foreseen, all things are before Him in one clear prospect."*
2. His exact curious working.
 - a. The work of creation.
 - 1.) Creation is both a monument of God's power, and a looking-glass in which we may see His wisdom.
 - 2.) **[Psalm 74.17]- Thou hast set all the borders of the earth: thou hast made summer and winter.**
 - 3.) **[Psalm 104.24]- O LORD, how manifold are thy works! in wisdom hast thou made them all: the earth is full of thy riches.**
 - b. The work of redemption.
 - 1.) *"The masterpiece of divine wisdom, to contrive a way to happiness between the sin of man and the justice of God."*
 - a.) **[Romans 11.33]- O the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of God! how unsearchable are his judgments, and his ways past finding out!**
 - b.) **[1 Timothy 3.16]- And without controversy great is the mystery of godliness: God was manifest in the flesh, justified in the Spirit, seen of angels, preached unto the Gentiles, believed on in the world, received up into glory.**
 - 2.) *"The means by which salvation is applied sets forth God's wisdom; that salvation should be by faith, not by works."*
 - 3.) The way of working faith declares God's wisdom. It is wrought by the by the Word preached.

- a.) *[Romans 10.17]- So then faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God.*
 - b.) *[1 Corinthians 1.27-29]- But God hath chosen the foolish things of the world to confound the wise; and God hath chosen the weak things of the world to confound the things which are mighty; And base things of the world, and things which are despised, hath God chosen, yea, and things which are not, to bring to nought things that are: That no flesh should glory in his presence.*
 - c.) *[2 Corinthians 4.7]- But we have this treasure in earthen vessels, that the excellency of the power may be of God, and not of us.*
- c. His works of providence.
- 1.) By effecting great things by small contemptible things.
 - 2.) In doing His work by that which to the eye of flesh seems quite contrary.
 - a.) *[Genesis 39.20]- And Joseph's master took him, and put him into the prison, a place where the king's prisoners were bound: and he was there in the prison.*
 - b.) *[Genesis 50.20]- But as for you, ye thought evil against me; but God meant it unto good, to bring to pass, as it is this day, to save much people alive.*
 - c.) *[Judges 7.2]- And the LORD said unto Gideon, The people that are with thee are too many for me to give the Midianites into their hands, lest Israel vaunt themselves against me, saying, Mine own hand hath saved me.*
 - d.) *[Psalm 105.25]- He turned their heart to hate his people, to deal subtilly with his servants.*
 - e.) *[Exodus 12.33]- And the Egyptians were urgent upon the people, that they might send them out of the land in haste; for they said, We be all dead men.*
 - f.) *[Acts 27.44]- And the rest, some on boards, and some on broken pieces of the ship. And so it came to pass, that they escaped all safe to land.*
 - g.) *[Exodus 1.10,12]- Come on, let us deal wisely with them; lest they multiply, and it come to pass, that, when there falleth out any war, they join also unto our enemies, and fight against us, and so get them up out of the land. But the more they afflicted them, the more they multiplied and grew. And they were grieved because of the children of Israel.*
 - h.) *[Philippians 1.12]- But I would ye should understand, brethren, that the things which happened unto me have fallen out rather unto the furtherance of the gospel;*
 - 3.) By making the most desperate evils turn to the good of His children.
 - a.) *[2 Corinthians 4.17]- For our light affliction, which is but for a moment, worketh for us a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory;*
 - b.) *"The wise God, by a divine chemistry, turns afflictions into cordials. He makes his people gainers by losses, and turns their crosses into blessings."*
 - 4.) That the sins of men shall carry on God's work; yet He should have no hand in their sin.
 - 5.) The wisdom of God is seen in helping the desperate cases.
 - a.) *[Psalm 136.23]- Who remembered us in our low estate: for his mercy endureth for ever:*
 - b.) *[Joshua 2.24]- And they said unto Joshua, Truly the LORD hath delivered into our hands all the land; for even all the inhabitants of the country do faint because of us.*
 - 6.) God's wisdom is seen in befooling wise men, and in making their wisdom the means of their overthrow.

- a.) *[2 Samuel 16.23]- And the counsel of Ahithophel, which he counselled in those days, was as if a man had enquired at the oracle of God: so was all the counsel of Ahithophel both with David and with Absalom.*
- b.) *[2 Samuel 15.31]- And one told David, saying, Ahithophel is among the conspirators with Absalom. And David said, O LORD, I pray thee, turn the counsel of Ahithophel into foolishness.*
- c.) *[Job 5.13]- He taketh the wise in their own craftiness: and the counsel of the froward is carried headlong.*
- d.) *[Psalm 9.15]- The heathen are sunk down in the pit that they made: in the net which they hid is their own foot taken.*

C. Use 1: Adore and rest in the wisdom of God.

- 1. In want of spiritual comfort.
 - a. *[2 Corinthians 2.7]- So that contrariwise ye ought rather to forgive him, and comfort him, lest perhaps such a one should be swallowed up with overmuch sorrow.*
- 2. In want of bodily strength.
 - a. *[2 Corinthians 4.16]- For which cause we faint not; but though our outward man perish, yet the inward man is renewed day by day.*
 - b. *[Hebrews 12.11]- Now no chastening for the present seemeth to be joyous, but grievous: nevertheless afterward it yieldeth the peaceable fruit of righteousness unto them which are exercised thereby.*
 - c. *[Isaiah 27.9]- By this therefore shall the iniquity of Jacob be purged; and this is all the fruit to take away his sin; when he maketh all the stones of the altar as chalkstones that are beaten in sunder, the groves and images shall not stand up.*
- 3. In case of God's providences to His church.
 - a. *[Psalm 77.19]- Thy way is in the sea, and thy path in the great waters, and thy footsteps are not known.*
 - b. *[Song of Solomon 2.8]- The voice of my beloved! behold, he cometh leaping upon the mountains, skipping upon the hills.*
- 4. In case we are low in the world, or have but little oil in our cruse.
 - a. *[1 Timothy 6.9]- But they that will be rich fall into temptation and a snare, and into many foolish and hurtful lusts, which drown men in destruction and perdition.*
- 5. In case of the loss of dear friends.

D. Use 2: If God be infinitely wise, let us go to Him for wisdom

- 1. *[1 Kings 3.9]- Give therefore thy servant an understanding heart to judge thy people, that I may discern between good and bad: for who is able to judge this thy so great a people?*
- 2. *[James 1.5]- If any of you lack wisdom, let him ask of God, that giveth to all men liberally, and upbraideth not; and it shall be given him.*

IX. The Power of God.

A. *El-shaddai* - God Almighty.

- 1. *[Job 9.19]- If I speak of strength, lo, he is strong: and if of judgment, who shall set me a time to plead?*
- 2. *[Genesis 17.1]- And when Abram was ninety years old and nine, the LORD appeared to Abram, and said unto him, I am the Almighty God; walk before me, and be thou perfect.*

B. God has both authority and power.

- 1. He has a sovereign right and authority over man.

- a. *[Daniel 4.35]- And all the inhabitants of the earth are reputed as nothing: and he doeth according to his will in the army of heaven, and among the inhabitants of the earth: and none can stay his hand, or say unto him, What doest thou?*
 - b. *[Psalm 75.7]- But God is the judge: he putteth down one, and setteth up another.*
 - c. *[Revelation 19.16]- And he hath on his vesture and on his thigh a name written, KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS.*
 - d. *[Isaiah 46.10]- Declaring the end from the beginning, and from ancient times the things that are not yet done, saying, My counsel shall stand, and I will do all my pleasure:*
 - e. *[Isaiah 14.12]- How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! how art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations!*
 - f. *[Job 38.11]- And said, Hitherto shalt thou come, but no further: and here shall thy proud waves be stayed?*
 - g. *[Romans 13.1]- Let every soul be subject unto the higher powers. For there is no power but of God: the powers that be are ordained of God.*
 - h. *[Proverbs 8.15]- By me kings reign, and princes decree justice.*
2. As God has authority, so He has infinite power
- a. *[Job 9.4]- He is wise in heart, and mighty in strength: who hath hardened himself against him, and hath prospered?*
 - b. In the creation.
 - 1.) *[Psalm 33.9]- For he spake, and it was done; he commanded, and it stood fast.*
 - c. In the conversion of souls.
 - 1.) *[Ephesians 1.19]- And what is the exceeding greatness of his power to us-ward who believe, according to the working of his mighty power,*
 - 2.) *[Psalm 8.3]- When I consider thy heavens, the work of thy fingers, the moon and the stars, which thou hast ordained;*
 - 3.) *[Luke 1.51]- He hath shewed strength with his arm; he hath scattered the proud in the imagination of their hearts.*
 - 4.) *[Amos 9.5]- And the Lord GOD of hosts is he that toucheth the land, and it shall melt, and all that dwell therein shall mourn: and it shall rise up wholly like a flood; and shall be drowned, as by the flood of Egypt.*
 - 5.) *[Job 9.6]- Which shaketh the earth out of her place, and the pillars thereof tremble.*
 - 6.) *[Ephesians 3.20]- Now unto him that is able to do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think, according to the power that worketh in us,*
 - 7.) *[Isaiah 38.8]- Behold, I will bring again the shadow of the degrees, which is gone down in the sun dial of Ahaz, ten degrees backward. So the sun returned ten degrees, by which degrees it was gone down.*
 - 8.) *[Psalm 76.12]- He shall cut off the spirit of princes: he is terrible to the kings of the earth.*
 - 9.) *[Psalm 33.6]- By the word of the LORD were the heavens made; and all the host of them by the breath of his mouth.*
 - 10.) *[Isaiah 40.24]- Yea, they shall not be planted; yea, they shall not be sown: yea, their stock shall not take root in the earth: and he shall also blow upon them, and they shall wither, and the whirlwind shall take them away as stubble.*
 - 11.) *[Exodus 14.24]- And it came to pass, that in the morning watch the LORD looked unto the host of the Egyptians through the pillar of fire and of the cloud, and troubled the host of the Egyptians,*
 - 12.) *[Exodus 15.3]- The LORD is a man of war: the LORD is his name.*
 - 13.) *[Psalm 89.13]- Thou hast a mighty arm: strong is thy hand, and high is thy right hand.*
 - 14.) *[Colossians 1.11]- Strengthened with all might, according to his glorious power, unto all patience and longsuffering with joyfulness;*

- 15.)[Romans 9.19]- *Thou wilt say then unto me, Why doth he yet find fault? For who hath resisted his will?*
- 16.)[Isaiah 43.13]- *Yea, before the day was I am he; and there is none that can deliver out of my hand: I will work, and who shall let it?*
- 17.)[Isaiah 26.4]- *Trust ye in the LORD for ever: for in the LORD JEHOVAH is everlasting strength:*
- 18.)[Deuteronomy 32.23]- *I will heap mischiefs upon them; I will spend mine arrows upon them.*
- 19.)[Isaiah 40.28]- *Hast thou not known? hast thou not heard, that the everlasting God, the LORD, the Creator of the ends of the earth, fainteth not, neither is weary? there is no searching of his understanding.*

d. God cannot do all things, because He cannot deny Himself.

C. Use 1: If God is infinite in power, let us fear Him.

1. [Jeremiah 5.22]- *Fear ye not me? saith the LORD: will ye not tremble at my presence, which have placed the sand for the bound of the sea by a perpetual decree, that it cannot pass it: and though the waves thereof toss themselves, yet can they not prevail; though they roar, yet can they not pass over it?*
2. [Psalm 90.11]- *Who knoweth the power of thine anger? even according to thy fear, so is thy wrath.*
3. [Nahum 1.6]- *Who can stand before his indignation? and who can abide in the fierceness of his anger? his fury is poured out like fire, and the rocks are thrown down by him.*
4. [Ecclesiastes 8.4]- *Where the word of a king is, there is power: and who may say unto him, What doest thou?*

D. Use 2: See the deplorable condition of wicked men.

1. The power of God is not for them.
2. The power of God is against them.
 - a. [Hebrews 10.31]- *It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God.*

E. Use 3: It reproves such as do not believe the power of God.

1. [Jeremiah 32.27]- *Behold, I am the LORD, the God of all flesh: is there any thing too hard for me?*
2. [Psalm 78.19]- *Yea, they spake against God; they said, Can God furnish a table in the wilderness?*
3. [John 11.39]- *Jesus said, Take ye away the stone. Martha, the sister of him that was dead, saith unto him, Lord, by this time he stinketh: for he hath been dead four days.*
4. [Numbers 11.21]- *And Moses said, The people, among whom I am, are six hundred thousand footmen; and thou hast said, I will give them flesh, that they may eat a whole month.*
5. [2 Chronicles 16.12]- *And Asa in the thirty and ninth year of his reign was diseased in his feet, until his disease was exceeding great: yet in his disease he sought not to the LORD, but to the physicians.*

F. Use 4: If God be infinite in power, let us take heed of hardening our hearts against Him.

1. [Job 9.4]- *He is wise in heart, and mighty in strength: who hath hardened himself against him, and hath prospered?*
2. [Job 40.9]- *Hast thou an arm like God? or canst thou thunder with a voice like him?*

G. Use 5: Get an interest in God, and then this glorious power is engaged for you.

1. [1 Chronicles 17.24]- *Let it even be established, that thy name may be magnified for ever, saying, The LORD of hosts is the God of Israel, even a God to Israel: and let the house of David thy servant be established before thee.*

2. *[Judges 14.14]- And he said unto them, Out of the eater came forth meat, and out of the strong came forth sweetness. And they could not in three days expound the riddle.*
3. God's power is a wonderful support and comfort to the believer.
 - a. In case of strong corruption.
 - 1.) *[Genesis 18.14]- Is any thing too hard for the LORD? At the time appointed I will return unto thee, according to the time of life, and Sarah shall have a son.*
 - b. In case of strong temptation.
 - 1.) *[Revelation 5.5]- And one of the elders saith unto me, Weep not: behold, the Lion of the tribe of Judah, the Root of David, hath prevailed to open the book, and to loose the seven seals thereof.*
 - c. In case of weakness of grace.
 - 1.) *[2 Corinthians 12.9]- And he said unto me, My grace is sufficient for thee: for my strength is made perfect in weakness. Most gladly therefore will I rather glory in my infirmities, that the power of Christ may rest upon me.*
 - 2.) *[1 Peter 1.5]- Who are kept by the power of God through faith unto salvation ready to be revealed in the last time.*
 - d. In case of deficiency of estate.
 - 1.) *[Matthew 6.28]- And why take ye thought for raiment? Consider the lilies of the field, how they grow; they toil not, neither do they spin:*
 - 2.) *[Luke 12.27]- Consider the lilies how they grow: they toil not, they spin not; and yet I say unto you, that Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these.*
 - e. In regard to the resurrection.
 - 1.) *[Matthew 19.26]- But Jesus beheld them, and said unto them, With men this is impossible; but with God all things are possible.*
 - 2.) *[John 11.24-25]- Martha saith unto him, I know that he shall rise again in the resurrection at the last day. Jesus said unto her, I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live:*
 - 3.) *[Acts 24.15]- And have hope toward God, which they themselves also allow, that there shall be a resurrection of the dead, both of the just and unjust.*
 - f. In reference to the church.
 - 1.) *[Psalm 76.10]- Surely the wrath of man shall praise thee: the remainder of wrath shalt thou restrain.*
 - 2.) *[Romans 8.31]- What shall we then say to these things? If God be for us, who can be against us?*
 - 3.) *[Isaiah 65.18]- But be ye glad and rejoice for ever in that which I create: for, behold, I create Jerusalem a rejoicing, and her people a joy.*
 - 4.) *[Ezekiel 37.1-10]- The hand of the LORD was upon me, and carried me out in the spirit of the LORD, and set me down in the midst of the valley which was full of bones, And caused me to pass by them round about: and, behold, there were very many in the open valley; and, lo, they were very dry. And he said unto me, Son of man, can these bones live? And I answered, O Lord GOD, thou knowest. Again he said unto me, Prophecy upon these bones, and say unto them, O ye dry bones, hear the word of the LORD. Thus saith the Lord GOD unto these bones; Behold, I will cause breath to enter into you, and ye shall live: And I will lay sinews upon you, and will bring up flesh upon you, and cover you with skin, and put breath in you, and ye shall live; and ye shall know that I am the LORD. So I prophesied as I was commanded: and as I prophesied, there was a noise, and behold a shaking, and the bones came together, bone to his bone. And when I beheld, lo, the sinews and the flesh came up upon them, and the skin covered them above: but there was no breath*

in them. Then said he unto me, Prophecy unto the wind, prophecy, son of man, and say to the wind, Thus saith the Lord GOD; Come from the four winds, O breath, and breathe upon these slain, that they may live. So I prophesied as he commanded me, and the breath came into them, and they lived, and stood up upon their feet, an exceeding great army.

5.) *[Psalm 46.5]- God is in the midst of her; she shall not be moved: God shall help her, and that right early.*

X. The Holiness of God.

A. Proof texts

1. *[Exodus 15.11]- Who is like unto thee, O LORD, among the gods? who is like thee, glorious in holiness, fearful in praises, doing wonders?*
2. *[Psalm 111.9]- He sent redemption unto his people: he hath commanded his covenant for ever: holy and reverend is his name.*
3. *[Job 6.10]- Then should I yet have comfort; yea, I would harden myself in sorrow: let him not spare; for I have not concealed the words of the Holy One.*
4. *[Isaiah 6.3]- And one cried unto another, and said, Holy, holy, holy, is the LORD of hosts: the whole earth is full of his glory.*
5. *[Habakkuk 1.13]- Thou art of purer eyes than to behold evil, and canst not look on iniquity: wherefore lookest thou upon them that deal treacherously, and holdest thy tongue when the wicked devoureth the man that is more righteous than he?*

B. God is holy intrinsically.

1. *[Psalm 119.140]- Thy word is very pure: therefore thy servant loveth it.*
2. *[Psalm 12.6]- The words of the LORD are pure words: as silver tried in a furnace of earth, purified seven times.*
3. *[Psalm 165.17]- The LORD is righteous in all his ways, and holy in all his works.*

C. God is holy primarily.

1. *"He is the original and pattern of holiness."*
2. *[Daniel 7.9]- I beheld till the thrones were cast down, and the Ancient of days did sit, whose garment was white as snow, and the hair of his head like the pure wool: his throne was like the fiery flame, and his wheels as burning fire.*

D. God is holy efficiently.

1. *[James 1.17]- Every good gift and every perfect gift is from above, and cometh down from the Father of lights, with whom is no variableness, neither shadow of turning.*
2. *[Leviticus 20.8]- And ye shall keep my statutes, and do them: I am the LORD which sanctify you.*

E. God is holy transcendentally.

1. *[1 Samuel 2.2]- There is none holy as the LORD: for there is none beside thee: neither is there any rock like our God.*
2. God is far above holiness in saints or angels.
 - a. The holiness of God is above holiness in saints.
 - 1.) The saint's holiness is like gold in the ore, imperfect.
 - 2.) The holiness of God is pure, like the wine from the grape.
 - 3.) A saint's holiness is subject to ebbing, but the holiness of God is unchangeable.
 - 4.) *[Revelation 2.4]- Nevertheless I have somewhat against thee, because thou hast left thy first love.*
- b. The holiness of God is above the holiness of angels.
 - 1.) *"Holiness in angels is only a quality, which may be lost, as we see in the fallen angels."*

2.) *“Holiness in God is His essence, He is all over holy, and he can as well lose His Godhead than His holiness.”*

- F. But is He not privy to all of the sins of men? How can He behold their impurities, and not be defiled?
1. *God is no more defiled with the sins of men then the sun is defiled with the vapors that rise from the earth.*
 2. *God sees our sins, not as a patron to approve it, but as a judge to punish it.*
- G. Use 1: Is God so infinitely holy? Then see how unlike to God sin is.
1. *[Romans 1.23]- And changed the glory of the uncorruptible God into an image made like to corruptible man, and to birds, and fourfooted beasts, and creeping things.*
 2. *[Deuteronomy 7.25]- The graven images of their gods shall ye burn with fire: thou shalt not desire the silver or gold that is on them, nor take it unto thee, lest thou be snared therein: for it is an abomination to the LORD thy God.*
 3. *[Joshua 7.11]- Israel hath sinned, and they have also transgressed my covenant which I commanded them: for they have even taken of the accursed thing, and have also stolen, and dissembled also, and they have put it even among their own stuff.*
- H. Use 2: Is God the Holy One, and is holiness His glory? How impious are they that are haters of holiness!
1. *[Genesis 21.9-10]- And Sarah saw the son of Hagar the Egyptian, which she had born unto Abraham, mocking. Wherefore she said unto Abraham, Cast out this bondwoman and her son: for the son of this bondwoman shall not be heir with my son, even with Isaac.*
- I. Use 3: Is God so infinitely holy? Then let us endeavor to imitate God.
1. *[1 Peter 1.16]- Because it is written, Be ye holy; for I am holy.*
 2. A two-fold holiness.
 - a. A holiness of equality. No man or angel to reach to.
 - b. A holiness of similitude. One that we may aspire after.
 3. *If we must be like God in holiness, wherein does our holiness consist?*
 - a. In our suitableness to God's nature.
 - 1.) *[2 Peter 1.4]- Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises: that by these ye might be partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust.*
 - b. In our subjection to His will.
 - 1.) As God's nature is the pattern of holiness, so His will is the rule of holiness.
 - 2.) *[Acts 13.22]- And when he had removed him, he raised up unto them David to be their king; to whom also he gave their testimony, and said, I have found David the son of Jesse, a man after mine own heart, which shall fulfill all my will.*
 - 3.) *[Micah 7.9]- I will bear the indignation of the LORD, because I have sinned against him, until he plead my cause, and execute judgment for me: he will bring me forth to the light, and I shall behold his righteousness.*
 - 4.) *[Ephesians 4.24]- And that ye put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness.*
 - 5.) *[Psalm 45.13]- The king's daughter is all glorious within: her clothing is of wrought gold.*
 4. Consideration in resembling God in holiness.
 - a. How illustrious every holy person is.
 - 1.) *[Exodus 28.2]- And thou shalt make holy garments for Aaron thy brother for glory and for beauty.*

- b. It is God's great design in the world, to make a people like Himself in holiness.
 - 1.) *[1 John 2.20]- But ye have an unction from the Holy One, and ye know all things.*
 - 2.) *[Hebrews 12.10]- For they verily for a few days chastened us after their own pleasure; but he for our profit, that we might be partakers of his holiness.*
 - 3.) *[Titus 2.14]- Who gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify unto himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works.*
- c. Our holiness draws God's heart to us.
 - 1.) A king loves to see his effigies upon a piece of coin.
 - 2.) *[Psalm 45.7]- Thou lovest righteousness, and hatest wickedness: therefore God, thy God, hath anointed thee with the oil of gladness above thy fellows.*
 - 3.) *[Isaiah 62.4]- Thou shalt no more be termed Forsaken; neither shall thy land any more be termed Desolate: but thou shalt be called Hephzibah, and thy land Beulah: for the LORD delighteth in thee, and thy land shall be married.*
 - 4.) *[Isaiah 62.12]- And they shall call them, The holy people, The redeemed of the LORD: and thou shalt be called, Sought out, A city not forsaken.*
- d. Holiness is the only thing that distinguishes us from the reprobate part of the world.
 - 1.) *[2 Timothy 2.19]- Nevertheless the foundation of God standeth sure, having this seal, The Lord knoweth them that are his. And, let every one that nameth the name of Christ depart from iniquity.*
 - 2.) *[Hebrews 2.10]- For it became him, for whom are all things, and by whom are all things, in bringing many sons unto glory, to make the captain of their salvation perfect through sufferings.*
- e. Holiness is our honor.
 - 1.) *[1 Thessalonians 4.4]- That every one of you should know how to possess his vessel in sanctification and honour;*
 - 2.) *[Revelation 1.5]- And from Jesus Christ, who is the faithful witness, and the first begotten of the dead, and the prince of the kings of the earth. Unto him that loved us, and washed us from our sins in his own blood,*
- f. Holiness gives us boldness with God.
 - 1.) *[Job 22.23,26]- If thou return to the Almighty, thou shalt be built up, thou shalt put away iniquity far from thy tabernacles. For then shalt thou have thy delight in the Almighty, and shalt lift up thy face unto God.*
 - 2.) *[Hebrews 4.16]- Let us therefore come boldly unto the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy, and find grace to help in time of need.*
- g. Holiness gives peace.
 - 1.) *[Isaiah 57.21]- There is no peace, saith my God, to the wicked.*
- h. Holiness leads us to heaven.
 - 1.) *[Isaiah 35.8]- And an highway shall be there, and a way, and it shall be called The way of holiness; the unclean shall not pass over it; but it shall be for those: the wayfaring men, though fools, shall not err therein.*
 - 2.) *[2 Peter 1.3]- According as his divine power hath given unto us all things that pertain unto life and godliness, through the knowledge of him that hath called us to glory and virtue:*
- 5. What shall we do to resemble God in holiness?
 - a. Have recourse to Christ's blood by faith.
 - 1.) "This is *lavacrum animae*-the washing of the soul"

2.) *[1 John 1.7]- But if we walk in the light, as he is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from all sin.*

b. Pray for a holy heart.

1.) *[Psalm 51.10]- Create in me a clean heart, O God; and renew a right spirit within me.*

c. Walk with them that are holy.

1.) *[Proverbs 13.20]- He that walketh with wise men shall be wise: but a companion of fools shall be destroyed.*

XI. The Justice of God.

A. Proof texts

1. *[Deuteronomy 32.4]- He is the Rock, his work is perfect: for all his ways are judgment: a God of truth and without iniquity, just and right is he.*
2. *[Job 37.23]- Touching the Almighty, we cannot find him out: he is excellent in power, and in judgment, and in plenty of justice: he will not afflict.*
3. *[Psalm 89.14]- Justice and judgment are the habitation of thy throne: mercy and truth shall go before thy face.*

B. What is God's justice?

1. The rectitude of His nature whereby He is carried to the doing of that which is righteous and equal.
2. *[Proverbs 24.12]- If thou sayest, Behold, we knew it not; doth not he that pondereth the heart consider it? and he that keepeth thy soul, doth not he know it? and shall not he render to every man according to his works?*
3. *[Genesis 18.21]- I will go down now, and see whether they have done altogether according to the cry of it, which is come unto me; and if not, I will know.*
4. God cannot be but just. His holiness is the cause of His justice.
5. God's will is the supreme rule of justice. It is the standard of equity.
6. God does justice voluntarily. Justice flows from His nature
 - a. *[Psalm 45.7]- Thou lovest righteousness, and hatest wickedness: therefore God, thy God, hath anointed thee with the oil of gladness above thy fellows.*
7. Justice is the perfection of the divine nature. He is not only just but justice itself.
8. God never did nor can do the least wrong to His creatures.
 - a. *[Ezra 9.13]- And after all that is come upon us for our evil deeds, and for our great trespass, seeing that thou our God hast punished us less than our iniquities deserve, and hast given us such deliverance as this;*
9. God's justice is such that it is not fit for any man or angel to expostulate with Him, or demand a reason of His actions.
 - a. *[Isaiah 28.17]- Judgment also will I lay to the line, and righteousness to the plummet: and the hail shall sweep away the refuge of lies, and the waters shall overflow the hiding place.*
 - b. *[Romans 9.20]- Nay but, O man, who art thou that repliest against God? Shall the thing formed say to him that formed it, Why hast thou made me thus?*
 - c. *[Romans 11.33]- O the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of God! how unsearchable are his judgments, and his ways past finding out!*

C. God's justice runs in two channels.

1. The distribution of rewards.
 - a. *[Psalm 58.11]- So that a man shall say, Verily there is a reward for the righteous: verily he is a God that judgeth in the earth.*

- b. *[Hebrews 6.10]- For God is not unrighteous to forget your work and labour of love, which ye have shewed toward his name, in that ye have ministered to the saints, and do minister.*
 - 2. The distribution of punishments. He is just in punishing offenders.
 - a. He punishes sinners by a law.
 - 1.) *[Romans 4.15]- Because the law worketh wrath: for where no law is, there is no transgression.*
 - b. He never punished them but upon full proof and evidence.
- D. Use 1: See here another flower of God's crown. He is just and righteous. He is the exemplar and pattern of justice.
 - 1. But how does it seem to stand with God's justice, that the wicked should prosper?
 - a. *[Jeremiah 12.1]- Righteous art thou, O LORD, when I plead with thee: yet let me talk with thee of thy judgments: Wherefore doth the way of the wicked prosper? wherefore are all they happy that deal very treacherously?*
 - b. The wicked may be sometimes instruments to do God's work. Thought they do not design His glory, yet they may promote it.
 - 1.) *[Ezra 1.7]- Also Cyrus the king brought forth the vessels of the house of the LORD, which Nebuchadnezzar had brought forth out of Jerusalem, and had put them in the house of his gods;*
 - 2.) *[Malachi 1.10]- Who is there even among you that would shut the doors for nought? neither do ye kindle fire on mine altar for nought. I have no pleasure in you, saith the LORD of hosts, neither will I accept an offering at your hand.*
 - 3.) *[Luke 9.49-50]- And John answered and said, Master, we saw one casting out devils in thy name; and we forbid him, because he followeth not with us. And Jesus said unto him, Forbid him not: for he that is not against us is for us.*
 - c. God lets men go in sin, and prosper, that He may leave them more inexcusable.
 - 1.) *[Revelation 2.21]- And I gave her space to repent of her fornication; and she repented not.*
 - 2.) *[Psalm 51.4]- Against thee, thee only, have I sinned, and done this evil in thy sight: that thou mightest be justified when thou speakest, and be clear when thou judgest.*
 - d. God does not always let the wicked prosper in their sin.
 - 1.) *[Psalm 9.16]- The LORD is known by the judgment which he executeth: the wicked is snared in the work of his own hands. Higgsion. Selah.*
 - e. If God lets men prosper a while in their sin, His vial of wrath is all the while filling.
 - 2. But God's own people suffer great afflictions; they are injured and persecuted. How does this stand with God's justice?
 - a. *[Psalm 73.14]- For all the day long have I been plagued, and chastened every morning.*
 - b. "Judicia Dei possunt esse occulta, non injusta; God's ways of judgment are sometimes secret, but never unjust." - Austin
 - 1.) *[2 Chronicles 28.10]- And now ye purpose to keep under the children of Judah and Jerusalem for bondmen and bondwomen unto you: but are there not with you, even with you, sins against the LORD your God?*
 - 2.) *[Deuteronomy 32.5]- They have corrupted themselves, their spot is not the spot of his children: they are a perverse and crooked generation.*
 - 3.) *[Deuteronomy 32.19]- And when the LORD saw it, he abhorred them, because of the provoking of his sons, and of his daughters.*

- 4.) *[Amos 3.2]- You only have I known of all the families of the earth: therefore I will punish you for all your iniquities.*
- c. **The trials and sufferings of the godly are to refine and purify them.**
 - 1.) *[Isaiah 31.9]- And he shall pass over to his strong hold for fear, and his princes shall be afraid of the ensign, saith the LORD, whose fire is in Zion, and his furnace in Jerusalem.*
 - 2.) *[Hebrews 12.10]- For they verily for a few days chastened us after their own pleasure; but he for our profit, that we might be partakers of his holiness.*
 - 3.) *[Psalm 119.75]- I know, O LORD, that thy judgments are right, and that thou in faithfulness hast afflicted me.*
- d. What injustice is it in God to inflict a less punishment, and prevent a greater?
 - 1.) *"If God deals so favorably with His children, He only puts wormwood in their cup, whereas He might put fire and brimstone."*
3. How can it stand with God's justice, that all men being equally guilty by nature, He should pass by one and save another? Why does He not deal with all alike?
 - a. *[Romans 9.14]- What shall we say then? Is there unrighteousness with God? God forbid.*
 - b. *[Job 8.3]- Doth God pervert judgment? or doth the Almighty pervert justice?*
 - c. God is not bound to give an account of His actions to His creatures.
 - 1.) *[Ecclesiastes 8.4]- Where the word of a king is, there is power: and who may say unto him, What doest thou?*
 - 2.) *[Romans 9.21]- Hath not the potter power over the clay, of the same lump to make one vessel unto honour, and another unto dishonour?*
 - d. Though some are saved and others perish, yet there is no unrighteousness in God; because, whoever perishes, his destruction is of himself.
 - 1.) *[Hosea 13.9]- O Israel, thou hast destroyed thyself; but in me is thine help.*
 - 2.) *[Proverbs 1.24]- Because I have called, and ye refused; I have stretched out my hand, and no man regarded;*
 - 3.) *[Psalm 81.11]- But my people would not hearken to my voice; and Israel would none of me.*
- E. Use 2: See the difference between God and a great part of the world.
 1. Men are unjust in the courts of judicature and they pervert justice.
 - a. *[Isaiah 10.1]- Woe unto them that decree unrighteous decrees, and that write grievousness which they have prescribed;*
 2. Men are unjust in their dealings.
 - a. In using false weights.
 - 1.) *[Hosea 12.7]- He is a merchant, the balances of deceit are in his hand: he loveth to oppress.*
 - b. In adulterating commodities.
 - 1.) *[Isaiah 1.22]- Thy silver is become dross, thy wine mixed with water:*
- F. Use 3: Imitate God in justice.
- G. Use 4: If God be just, there will be a day of judgment.
- H. Comfort to the true penitent.

XII. The Mercy of God.

- A. The result and effect of God's goodness.

1. *[Psalm 33.5]- He loveth righteousness and judgment: the earth is full of the goodness of the LORD.*
2. *[Psalm 119.68]- Thou art good, and doest good; teach me thy statutes.*

B. Twelve positions concerning God's mercy.

1. It is the great design of the Scripture to represent God as merciful.
 - a. *[Exodus 34.6-7]- And the LORD passed by before him, and proclaimed, The LORD, The LORD God, merciful and gracious, longsuffering, and abundant in goodness and truth, Keeping mercy for thousands, forgiving iniquity and transgression and sin, and that will by no means clear the guilty; visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children, and upon the children's children, unto the third and to the fourth generation.*
 - b. *[Psalm 57.10]- For thy mercy is great unto the heavens, and thy truth unto the clouds.*
 - c. *[Psalm 108.4]- For thy mercy is great above the heavens: and thy truth reacheth unto the clouds.*
 - d. *[Revelation 4.3]- And he that sat was to look upon like a jasper and a sardine stone: and there was a rainbow round about the throne, in sight like unto an emerald.*
2. God is more inclinable to mercy than wrath.
 - a. *[Micah 7.18]- Who is a God like unto thee, that pardoneth iniquity, and passeth by the transgression of the remnant of his heritage? he retaineth not his anger for ever, because he delighteth in mercy.*
 - b. *[Isaiah 27.4]- Fury is not in me: who would set the briers and thorns against me in battle? I would go through them, I would burn them together.*
 - c. *[Lamentations 3.33]- For he doth not afflict willingly nor grieve the children of men.*
 - d. *[Jeremiah 44.22]- So that the LORD could no longer bear, because of the evil of your doings, and because of the abominations which ye have committed; therefore is your land a desolation, and an astonishment, and a curse, without an inhabitant, as at this day.*
 - e. *[Isaiah 28.22]- Now therefore be ye not mockers, lest your bands be made strong: for I have heard from the Lord GOD of hosts a consumption, even determined upon the whole earth.*
 - f. *[Isaiah 7.20]- In the same day shall the Lord shave with a razor that is hired, namely, by them beyond the river, by the king of Assyria, the head, and the hair of the feet: and it shall also consume the beard.*
 - g. *[Psalm 103.8]- The LORD is merciful and gracious, slow to anger, and plenteous in mercy.*
 - h. *[Psalm 86.5]- For thou, Lord, art good, and ready to forgive; and plenteous in mercy unto all them that call upon thee.*
3. There is no condition, but we may spy mercy in it.
 - a. *[Lamentations 3.22]- It is of the LORD's mercies that we are not consumed, because his compassions fail not.*
4. Mercy sweetens all God's other attributes.
5. God's mercy is one of the most orient pearls of His crown; it makes His Godhead appear amiable and lovely.
 - a. *[Exodus 33.19]- And he said, I will make all my goodness pass before thee, and I will proclaim the name of the LORD before thee; and will be gracious to whom I will be gracious, and will shew mercy on whom I will shew mercy.*
6. Even the wicked taste God's mercy.
 - a. *[Psalm 145.9]- The LORD is good to all: and his tender mercies are over all his works.*
7. Mercy coming to us in a covenant is sweetest.

- a. *[Leviticus 26.4-6, 12]- Then I will give you rain in due season, and the land shall yield her increase, and the trees of the field shall yield their fruit. And your threshing shall reach unto the vintage, and the vintage shall reach unto the sowing time: and ye shall eat your bread to the full, and dwell in your land safely. And I will give peace in the land, and ye shall lie down, and none shall make you afraid: and I will rid evil beasts out of the land, neither shall the sword go through your land. And I will walk among you, and will be your God, and ye shall be my people.*
8. One act of mercy engages God to more and greater mercies.
 - a. *"His mercy in election makes Him justify, adopt, glorify; one act of mercy engages God to more."*
9. All of the mercy in the creature is derived from God, and is but a drop of this ocean.
 - a. *[2 Corinthians 1.3]- Blessed be God, even the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of mercies, and the God of all comfort;*
10. As God's mercy makes the saints happy, so it should make them humble.
 - a. *[Job 10.15]- f I be wicked, woe unto me; and if I be righteous, yet will I not lift up my head. I am full of confusion; therefore see thou mine affliction;*
11. Mercy stays the speedy execution of God's justice.
 - a. *[Ezekiel 38.18]- And it shall come to pass at the same time when Gog shall come against the land of Israel, saith the Lord GOD, that my fury shall come up in my face.*
12. It is dreadful to have mercy as a witness against any one.
 - a. *[Esther 7.6]- And Esther said, The adversary and enemy is this wicked Haman. Then Haman was afraid before the king and the queen.*
- C. The qualifications or properties of God's mercy
 1. God's mercy is free.
 - a. *[Hosea 14.4]- I will heal their backsliding, I will love them freely: for mine anger is turned away from him.*
 - b. *[Ephesians 1.4]- According as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love:*
 - c. *[Romans 3.24]- Being justified freely by his grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus:*
 - d. *[Titus 3.5]- Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to his mercy he saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost;*
 2. God's mercy is an overflowing mercy; it is infinite.
 - a. *[Psalm 86.5]- For thou, Lord, art good, and ready to forgive; and plenteous in mercy unto all them that call upon thee.*
 - b. *[Ephesians 2.4]- But God, who is rich in mercy, for his great love wherewith he loved us,*
 - c. *[Psalm 51.1]- Have mercy upon me, O God, according to thy lovingkindness: according unto the multitude of thy tender mercies blot out my transgressions.*
 - d. *[Lamentations 3.23]- They are new every morning: great is thy faithfulness.*
 - e. *[Psalm 42.8]- Yet the LORD will command his lovingkindness in the day time, and in the night his song shall be with me, and my prayer unto the God of my life.*
 3. God's mercy is eternal.
 - a. *[Psalm 103.17]- But the mercy of the LORD is from everlasting to everlasting upon them that fear him, and his righteousness unto children's children;*
 - b. *[Psalm 136.1]- O give thanks unto the LORD; for he is good: for his mercy endureth for ever.*

- c. *[Psalm 103.9]- He will not always chide: neither will he keep his anger for ever.*
- D. Use 1: We are to look upon God in prayer, not in His judgment robes, but clothed with a rainbow full of mercy and clemency.
- E. Use 2: Believe in His mercy.
1. *[Psalm 52.8]- But I am like a green olive tree in the house of God: I trust in the mercy of God for ever and ever.*
 2. God shows His willingness to show mercy.
 - a. By entreating sinners to come and lay hold on His mercy.
 - 1.) *[Revelation 22.17]- And the Spirit and the bride say, Come. And let him that heareth say, Come. And let him that is athirst come. And whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely.*
 - b. By His joyfulness when sinners lay hold on His mercy.
 - 1.) *[Nehemiah 9.17]- And refused to obey, neither were mindful of thy wonders that thou didst among them; but hardened their necks, and in their rebellion appointed a captain to return to their bondage: but thou art a God ready to pardon, gracious and merciful, slow to anger, and of great kindness, and forsookest them not.*
 - 2.) *[Micah 7.18]- Who is a God like unto thee, that pardoneth iniquity, and passeth by the transgression of the remnant of his heritage? he retaineth not his anger for ever, because he delighteth in mercy.*
 - 3.) *[Matthew 13.58]- And he did not many mighty works there because of their unbelief.*
 - 4.) *[Psalm 25.11]- For thy name's sake, O LORD, pardon mine iniquity; for it is great.*
 - 5.) *[Isaiah 55.9]- For as the heavens are higher than the earth, so are my ways higher than your ways, and my thoughts than your thoughts.*
- F. Use 3: Take heed of abusing the mercy of God.
1. *[Deuteronomy 29.19-20]- And it come to pass, when he heareth the words of this curse, that he bless himself in his heart, saying, I shall have peace, though I walk in the imagination of mine heart, to add drunkenness to thirst: The LORD will not spare him, but then the anger of the LORD and his jealousy shall smoke against that man, and all the curses that are written in this book shall lie upon him, and the LORD shall blot out his name from under heaven.*
 2. *[Psalm 53.17]- But the mercy of the LORD is from everlasting to everlasting upon them that fear him, and his righteousness unto children's children;*
- G. What shall we do to be interested in God's mercy?
1. Be sensible of your wants. See how much you stand in need of pardoning, saving mercy.
 - a. *[Hosea 14.3]- Asshur shall not save us; we will not ride upon horses: neither will we say any more to the work of our hands, Ye are our gods: for in thee the fatherless findeth mercy.*
 2. Go to God for mercy.
 - a. *[Psalm 51.1]- Have mercy upon me, O God, according to thy lovingkindness: according unto the multitude of thy tender mercies blot out my transgressions.*
 - b. *[Psalm 103.4]- Who redeemeth thy life from destruction; who crowneth thee with lovingkindness and tender mercies;*
 - c. *[1 Samuel 7.9]- And Samuel took a sucking lamb, and offered it for a burnt offering wholly unto the LORD: and Samuel cried unto the LORD for Israel; and the LORD heard him.*
- H. Use 4: Such as have found mercy are exhorted to three things.
1. To be upon *Gerizim*, the mount of blessing and praising.
 - a. *[Psalm 103.1]- Bless the LORD, O my soul: and all that is within me, bless his holy name.*

- b. *[1 Timothy 1.13]- Who was before a blasphemer, and a persecutor, and injurious: but I obtained mercy, because I did it ignorantly in unbelief.*
 - c. *[Psalm 66.16]- Come and hear, all ye that fear God, and I will declare what he hath done for my soul.*
- 2. To love God. Mercy should be the attraction of love.
 - a. *[Psalm 18.1]- I will love thee, O LORD, my strength.*
 - b. *"God's justice may make us fear Him, His mercy makes us love Him."*
 - c. *"I would hate my soul if I did not find it loving God."*- Augustine
- 3. To imitate God in showing mercy.
 - a. *[Luke 6.36]- Be ye therefore merciful, as your Father also is merciful.*

XIII. The Truth of God.

A. Proof text

- 1. *[Deuteronomy 32.4]- He is the Rock, his work is perfect: for all his ways are judgment: a God of truth and without iniquity, just and right is he.*
- 2. *[Psalm 57.10]- For thy mercy is great unto the heavens, and thy truth unto the clouds.*
- 3. *[Psalm 86.15]- But thou, O Lord, art a God full of compassion, and gracious, long suffering, and plenteous in mercy and truth.*

B. God is the truth.

- 1. True in a physical sense; true in his being; He has a real subsistence, and gives a being to others.
- 2. True in a moral sense; He is without errors and deceit.
- 3. True as a pattern and prototype. There is nothing true but what is in God or comes from God.

C. God's truth as it is taken from His veracity in making good His promises.

- 1. *[1 Kings 8.56]- Blessed be the LORD, that hath given rest unto his people Israel, according to all that he promised: there hath not failed one word of all his good promise, which he promised by the hand of Moses his servant.*
- 2. Observations in the promises of God, which give us comfort.
 - a. The power of God, whereby He is able to fulfill the promise.
 - 1.) *[Micah 7.19]- He will turn again, he will have compassion upon us; he will subdue our iniquities; and thou wilt cast all their sins into the depths of the sea.*
 - 2.) *[Romans 4.21]- And being fully persuaded that, what he had promised, he was able also to perform.*
 - b. The truth of God in the promises.
 - 1.) *[Titus 1.2]- In hope of eternal life, which God, that cannot lie, promised before the world began;*
 - 2.) *"Mercy makes the promise, truth fulfills it."*
 - 3.) *[Acts 13.34]- And as concerning that he raised him up from the dead, now no more to return to corruption, he said on this wise, I will give you the sure mercies of David.*
 - 4.) *[1 Samuel 15.29]- And also the Strength of Israel will not lie nor repent: for he is not a man, that he should repent.*
 - 5.) *[2 Samuel 23.5]- Although my house be not so with God; yet he hath made with me an everlasting covenant, ordered in all things, and sure: for this is all my salvation, and all my desire, although he make it not to grow.*
 - 6.) *[Hebrews 6.17]- Wherein God, willing more abundantly to shew unto the heirs of promise the immutability of his counsel, confirmed it by an oath:*
 - 7.) *[Exodus 34.6]- And the LORD passed by before him, and proclaimed, The LORD, The LORD God, merciful and gracious, longsuffering, and abundant in goodness and truth,*

- c. The Lord may sometimes delay a promise, but He will not delay.
 - 1.) *[Luke 2. 26]- And it was revealed unto him by the Holy Ghost, that he should not see death, before he had seen the Lord's Christ.*
- d. God may change His promise, but He will not break it.
 - 1.) *[Psalm 85.12]- Yea, the LORD shall give that which is good; and our land shall yield her increase.*
 - 2.) *[Psalm 89.33]- Nevertheless my lovingkindness will I not utterly take from him, nor suffer my faithfulness to fail.*
- e. How some scripture consist with the truth of God.
 - 1.) *[1Timothy 2.4]- Who will have all men to be saved, and to come unto the knowledge of the truth.*
 - a.) *Not every person but all sorts shall be saved. As in the ark, God saved all of the living creatures, not every bird and fish but some of every kind.*
 - 2.) *[John 1.29]- The next day John seeth Jesus coming unto him, and saith, Behold the Lamb of God, which taketh away the sin of the world.*
 - a.) The world of the elect, not of the elect and the reprobates.
 - b.) Christ died sufficiently for all, not effectually.
 - 1.) Christ's blood has value enough to redeem the whole world but the virtue of it is applied only to those who believe.
 - 3.) *[Romans 9.22]- What if God, willing to shew his wrath, and to make his power known, endured with much longsuffering the vessels of wrath fitted to destruction:*
 - a.) *[Acts 13.46]- Then Paul and Barnabas waxed bold, and said, It was necessary that the word of God should first have been spoken to you: but seeing ye put it from you, and judge yourselves unworthy of everlasting life, lo, we turn to the Gentiles.*
 - b.) *[Hebrews 10.29]- Of how much sorer punishment, suppose ye, shall he be thought worthy, who hath trodden under foot the Son of God, and hath counted the blood of the covenant, wherewith he was sanctified, an unholy thing, and hath done despite unto the Spirit of grace?*
- f. Use 1: The truth of God is a great pillar for our faith.
 - 1.) *[Isaiah 59.15]- Yea, truth faileth; and he that departeth from evil maketh himself a prey: and the LORD saw it, and it displeased him that there was no judgment.*
 - 2.) *[Lamentations 3.25]- The LORD is good unto them that wait for him, to the soul that seeketh him.*
 - 3.) *[Matthew 11.28]- Come unto me, all ye that labour and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest.*
 - 4.) *[2 Timothy 2.13]- If we believe not, yet he abideth faithful: he cannot deny himself.*
 - 5.) *[1 John 5.10]- He that believeth on the Son of God hath the witness in himself: he that believeth not God hath made him a liar; because he believeth not the record that God gave of his Son.*
- g. Use 2: If God is a God of truth, He is true to His threatenings.
 - 1.) *[Psalm 68.21]- But God shall wound the head of his enemies, and the hairy scalp of such an one as goeth on still in his trespasses.*
 - 2.) *[Hebrews 13.4]- Marriage is honourable in all, and the bed undefiled: but whoremongers and adulterers God will judge.*

- 3.) *[Psalm 10.14]- Thou hast seen it; for thou beholdest mischief and spite, to requite it with thy hand: the poor committeth himself unto thee; thou art the helper of the fatherless.*
 - 4.) *[Psalm 11.6]- Upon the wicked he shall rain snares, fire and brimstone, and an horrible tempest: this shall be the portion of their cup.*
- h. Use 3: Is God is a God of truth? Let us be like Him in truth.
- 1.) We must be true in our words.
 - a.) *[Psalm 15.2]- He that walketh uprightly, and worketh righteousness, and speaketh the truth in his heart.*
 - b.) Truth in words is opposed to lying.
 - 1.) *[Ephesians 4.25]- Wherefore putting away lying, speak every man truth with his neighbour: for we are members one of another.*
 - 2.) Officious lies – telling lies for profit.
 - 3.) Jestling lies – telling lies for entertainment.
 - 4.) *[John 8.44]- Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it.*
 - 5.) *[Revelation 22.15]- For without are dogs, and sorcerers, and whoremongers, and murderers, and idolaters, and whosoever loveth and maketh a lie.*
 - 6.) *[Isaiah 9.15]- The ancient and honourable, he is the head; and the prophet that teacheth lies, he is the tail.*
 - c.) Truth in words is opposed to dissembling.
 - 1.) *[Psalm 55.21]- The words of his mouth were smoother than butter, but war was in his heart: his words were softer than oil, yet were they drawn swords.*
 - 2.) *[Proverbs 29.5]- A man that flattereth his neighbour spreadeth a net for his feet.*
 - 2.) We must be true in our profession of religion.
 - a.) *[Ephesians 4.24]- And that ye put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness.*
 - b.) *[Hosea 11.12]- Ephraim compasseth me about with lies, and the house of Israel with deceit: but Judah yet ruleth with God, and is faithful with the saints.*
 - c.) *[Revelation 2.9]- I know thy works, and tribulation, and poverty, (but thou art rich) and I know the blasphemy of them which say they are Jews, and are not, but are the synagogue of Satan.*
 - d.) *[Isaiah 63.8]- For he said, Surely they are my people, children that will not lie: so he was their Saviour.*

XIV. The Unity of God.

A. Are there more Gods than one?

1. There is but one only, the living and true God.
2. *[Deuteronomy 6.4]- Hear, O Israel: The LORD our God is one LORD:*
3. *[Deuteronomy 4.39]- Know therefore this day, and consider it in thine heart, that the LORD he is God in heaven above, and upon the earth beneath: there is none else.*
4. *[Isaiah 40.21]- Have ye not known? have ye not heard? hath it not been told you from the beginning? have ye not understood from the foundations of the earth?*
5. God's representatives called gods.
 - a. Kings
 - b. Judges
 - 1.) *[Psalm 82.6-7]- I have said, Ye are gods; and all of you are children of the most High. But ye shall die like men, and fall like one of the princes.*

2.) *[1 Corinthians 8.5-6]- For though there be that are called gods, whether in heaven or in earth, (as there be gods many, and lords many,) But to us there is but one God, the Father, of whom are all things, and we in him; and one Lord Jesus Christ, by whom are all things, and we by him.*

B. There is but one God.

1. There is but one *First Cause that has its Being of itself*, and on which all other beings depend.
 - a. As in the heavens, the *primum mobile* moves all the other orbs.
2. There is but one *infinite Being*, therefore there is but one God.
 - a. *[Jeremiah 23.24]- Can any hide himself in secret places that I shall not see him? saith the LORD. Do not I fill heaven and earth? saith the LORD.*
3. There is but one Omnipotent Power.
 - a. *[Isaiah 44.6]- Thus saith the LORD the King of Israel, and his redeemer the LORD of hosts; I am the first, and I am the last; and beside me there is no God.*

C. Use 1: Of Information.

1. If there be but one God, then it excludes other gods.
 - a. *[Matthew 22.29]- Jesus answered and said unto them, Ye do err, not knowing the scriptures, nor the power of God.*
 - b. *[Thessalonians 2.11]- And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie:*
2. If there be but one God, then there can be but one true religion in the world.
 - a. *[Ephesians 4.5]- One Lord, one faith, one baptism,*
 - b. *"Some say, we may be saved in any religion; but it is absurd to imagine that God who is One in essence, should appoint several religions in which He will be worshipped. It is dangerous to set up a false religion, as to set up a false god."*
3. If there be but one God, then there is but One whom you need chiefly to study to please, and that is God.
 - a. What doth this pleasing God imply?
 - 1.) We please God, when we comply with His will.
 - a.) *[John 4.34]- Jesus saith unto them, My meat is to do the will of him that sent me, and to finish his work.*
 - b.) *[Matthew 3.17]- And lo a voice from heaven, saying, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.*
 - c.) *[1 Thessalonians 4.3]- For this is the will of God, even your sanctification, that ye should abstain from fornication:*
 - 2.) We please God, when we do the work He sets us about.
 - a.) *[John 17.4]- I have glorified thee on the earth: I have finished the work which thou gavest me to do.*
 - 3.) We please God, when we dedicate our hearts to give Him the best of everything.
 - a.) *[Genesis 4.4]- And Abel, he also brought of the firstlings of his flock and of the fat thereof. And the LORD had respect unto Abel and to his offering:*
4. If there is but one God, then we must pray to none but God.
 - a. Not to saints. The papists say to pray to the saints and they will have compassion and in turn pray for us to God.
 - 1.) *[Matthew 15.23]- But he answered her not a word. And his disciples came and besought him, saying, Send her away; for she crieth after us.*

- 2.) *[Isaiah 63.16]- Doubtless thou art our father, though Abraham be ignorant of us, and Israel acknowledge us not: thou, O LORD, art our father, our redeemer; thy name is from everlasting.*
- b. Not to angels. Angel worship is forbidden.
 - 1.) *[Colossians 2.18-19]- Let no man beguile you of your reward in a voluntary humility and worshipping of angels, intruding into those things which he hath not seen, vainly puffed up by his fleshly mind, And not holding the Head, from which all the body by joints and bands having nourishment ministered, and knit together, increaseth with the increase of God.*
 - 2.) *[Romans 10.24]- How then shall they call on him in whom they have not believed? and how shall they believe in him of whom they have not heard? and how shall they hear without a preacher?*
5. If there is but one God, then He must be loved above all.
 - a. *[Ephesians 4.6]- One God and Father of all, who is above all, and through all, and in you all.*
 - b. We must love Him with a love of appreciation.
 - c. We must love Him with a love of complacency.
 - 1.) *"Amor est complacentia amantis amato"* The lover's effort to please the beloved, this is love. – Aquinas
 - d. *[Psalm 73.25]- Whom have I in heaven but thee? and there is none upon earth that I desire beside thee.*
- D. Use 2: Of caution.
 1. If there be but one God, then let us take heed of setting up more gods than one.
 - a. *[Psalm 16.4]- Their sorrows shall be multiplied that hasten after another god: their drink offerings of blood will I not offer, nor take up their names into my lips.*
 2. Forms of idolatry.
 - a. Some make a god of pleasure.
 - 1.) *[2 Timothy 3.4]- Traitors, heady, highminded, lovers of pleasures more than lovers of God;*
 - b. Some make a god of money.
 - 1.) *[Ephesians 5.5]- For this ye know, that no whoremonger, nor unclean person, nor covetous man, who is an idolater, hath any inheritance in the kingdom of Christ and of God.*
 - c. Another makes a god of his child, sets his child in God's room, and so provokes God to take it away.
 - 1.) *"If you lean too hard upon a glass it will break, so many break their children by leaning too hard upon them."*
 - d. Some make a god of their belly.
 - 1.) *[Philippians 3.19]- Whose end is destruction, whose God is their belly, and whose glory is in their shame, who mind earthly things.)*
 3. The wicked man's trinity.
 - a. *[1 John 2.16]- For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world.*

4. *[Judges 9.15]- And the bramble said unto the trees, If in truth ye anoint me king over you, then come and put your trust in my shadow: and if not, let fire come out of the bramble, and devour the cedars of Lebanon.*

E. Use 3: Of reproof.

1. If the Lord Jehovah be the only true God, it reproves those who renounce the true God, such as seek to familiar spirits, which is too much practiced among them that call themselves Christians.
 - a. *[Deuteronomy 18.11]- Or a charmer, or a consulter with familiar spirits, or a wizard, or a necromancer.*
 - b. *[2 Kings 1.6]- And they said unto him, There came a man up to meet us, and said unto us, Go, turn again unto the king that sent you, and say unto him, Thus saith the LORD, Is it not because there is not a God in Israel, that thou sendest to enquire of Baalzebub the god of Ekron? therefore thou shalt not come down from that bed on which thou art gone up, but shalt surely die.*

F. Use 4: Of exhortation.

1. If there be but one God, as God is one, so let them that serve Him be one.
 - a. *[John 17.21]- That they all may be one; as thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us: that the world may believe that thou hast sent me.*
 - b. Christians should be one in judgment.
 - 1.) *[1 Corinthians 1.10]- Now I beseech you, brethren, by the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye all speak the same thing, and that there be no divisions among you; but that ye be perfectly joined together in the same mind and in the same judgment.*
 - 2.) *[Matthew 13.39]- The enemy that sowed them is the devil; the harvest is the end of the world; and the reapers are the angels.*
 - c. Christians should be one in affection.
 - 1.) *[Acts 4.32]- And the multitude of them that believed were of one heart and of one soul: neither said any of them that ought of the things which he possessed was his own; but they had all things common.*
 - 2.) *[Psalm 133.1]- Behold, how good and how pleasant it is for brethren to dwell together in unity!*
 - 3.) *[John 17.21]- That they all may be one; as thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us: that the world may believe that thou hast sent me.*
2. If there be but one God, let us labor to make clear the title that this God is ours.
 - a. *[Psalm 98.14]- For this God is our God for ever and ever: he will be our guide even unto death.*

G. Use 5: Of gratitude.

1. What cause have we to be thankful, that we have the knowledge of the one true God!
 - a. *[Matthew 11.25]- At that time Jesus answered and said, I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, because thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes.*
 - b. *[1 Corinthians 2.9-10]- But as it is written, Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that love him. But God hath revealed them unto us by his Spirit: for the Spirit searcheth all things, yea, the deep things of God.*

XV. The Trinity

A. How many persons are there in the Godhead?

1. Three persons, yet but one God.

- a. ***[1 John 5.7]- For there are three that bear record in heaven, the Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost: and these three are one.***
 - b. *"As the two natures in Christ, yet but one person, is a wonder; so three persons, yet but one Godhead."*
 - c. *"The three persons in the blessed Trinity are distinguished, but not divided; three substances, but one essence."*
- B. Of the Unity in Trinity. The Unity of the persons in the Godhead consists of two things.
 1. The identity of essence
 - a. Oneness in essence.
 - b. The three persons of the Trinity are of the same divine nature and substance.
 - c. *Deo nonest magis et minus*, "there are no degrees in the Godhead"
 - d. One person is not god more than another.
 2. The mutual inbeing of them, or their being in one together.
 - a. The three persons are so united that one person is in another, and with another.
 - b. ***[John 17.21]- That they all may be one; as thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us: that the world may believe that thou hast sent me.***
- C. Of the Trinity in Unity
 1. The first person of the Trinity is God the Father.
 - a. The first person in respect of order, not dignity. There is a priority, not a superiority.
 2. The second person of the Trinity is Jesus Christ.
 - a. Begotten of the Father before all time.
 - b. ***[Proverbs 8.23-25]- I was set up from everlasting, from the beginning, or ever the earth was. When there were no depths, I was brought forth; when there were no fountains abounding with water. Before the mountains were settled, before the hills was I brought forth:***
 - c. ***[Jeremiah 23.5]- Behold, the days come, saith the LORD, that I will raise unto David a righteous Branch, and a King shall reign and prosper, and shall execute judgment and justice in the earth.***
 - d. ***[Acts 13.39]- And by him all that believe are justified from all things, from which ye could not be justified by the law of Moses.***
 3. The third person of the Trinity is the Holy Ghost.
 - a. Proceeds from the Father and the Son.
 - b. Work is to illuminate the mind, and enkindle sacred motions.
 - c. The essence of the Spirit is in Heaven, and everywhere; but the influence of it is in the hearts of believers.
 - d. ***[1 John 2.20]- But ye have an unction from the Holy One, and ye know all things.***
 - e. ***[Matthew 3.16]- And Jesus, when he was baptized, went up straightway out of the water: and, lo, the heavens were opened unto him, and he saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove, and lighting upon him:***
- D. Use 1: For confutation.
 1. This confutes the Jews and Turks who believe only the first person in the Godhead.
 - a. The overthrow of man's redemption without Christ.
 - b. No pacifying God through Jesus Christ our mediator
 - c. Man's salvation cannot be worked out without the Holy Spirit.
 - d. No comforter or paraclete without the Holy Spirit.
 2. It confutes the execrable opinion of the Socinians, who deny the Divinity of the Lord Jesus, and make Him a creature only, but of higher rank.

- a. *[Philippians 2.6]- Who, being in the form of God, thought it not robbery to be equal with God:*
 - b. *[Proverbs 8.23]- I was set up from everlasting, from the beginning, or ever the earth was.*
 - c. *[Hebrews 1.3]- Who being the brightness of his glory, and the express image of his person, and upholding all things by the word of his power, when he had by himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high:*
 - d. *[Colossians 2.9]- For in him dwelleth all the fulness of the Godhead bodily.*
 - e. *[John 1.1]- In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.*
 - f. *[1 Timothy 3.16]- And without controversy great is the mystery of godliness: God was manifest in the flesh, justified in the Spirit, seen of angels, preached unto the Gentiles, believed on in the world, received up into glory.*
 - g. *[Deuteronomy 6.5]- And thou shalt love the LORD thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy might.*
 - h. *[Matthew 22.37]- Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind.*
 - i. *[John 10.30]- I and my Father are one.*
 - j. The glorious incommunicable attributes belonging to God the Father are ascribed to Christ.
 - 1.) *[Revelation 1.8]- I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending, saith the Lord, which is, and which was, and which is to come, the Almighty.*
 - 2.) *[Colossians 1.16]- For by him were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers: all things were created by him, and for him:*
 - 3.) *[Jeremiah 23.24]- Can any hide himself in secret places that I shall not see him? saith the LORD. Do not I fill heaven and earth? saith the LORD.*
 - 4.) *[John 3.13]- And no man hath ascended up to heaven, but he that came down from heaven, even the Son of man which is in heaven.*
 - k. The same *jura regalia*, or prerogatives royal, which belong to God the Father, also belong also to Christ.
 - 1.) *[Matthew 9.2]- And, behold, they brought to him a man sick of the palsy, lying on a bed: and Jesus seeing their faith said unto the sick of the palsy; Son, be of good cheer; thy sins be forgiven thee.*
 - 2.) *[John 14.1]- Let not your heart be troubled: ye believe in God, believe also in me.*
 - 3.) *[Hebrews 1.6]- And again, when he bringeth in the first begotten into the world, he saith, And let all the angels of God worship him.*
3. It confutes the Arians, who deny the Holy Ghost to be God.
- a. *[John 16.13]- Howbeit when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall not speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear, that shall he speak: and he will shew you things to come.*
 - b. *[1 Corinthians 12.5-6]- And there are differences of administrations, but the same Lord. And there are diversities of operations, but it is the same God which worketh all in all.*
 - c. *[Matthew 12.32]- And whosoever speaketh a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but whosoever speaketh against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, neither in the world to come.*
 - d. *[Ezekiel 36.26]- A new heart also will I give you, and a new spirit will I put within you: and I will take away the stony heart out of your flesh, and I will give you an heart of flesh.*
 - e. *[Luke 1.35]- And the angel answered and said unto her, The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee: therefore also that holy thing which shall be born of thee shall be called the Son of God.*

- f. *[Romans 8.11]- But if the Spirit of him that raised up Jesus from the dead dwell in you, he that raised up Christ from the dead shall also quicken your mortal bodies by his Spirit that dwelleth in you.*
- g. *[1 Corinthians 6.19-20]- What? know ye not that your body is the temple of the Holy Ghost which is in you, which ye have of God, and ye are not your own? For ye are bought with a price: therefore glorify God in your body, and in your spirit, which are God's.*
- h. *[Acts 19.2]- He said unto them, Have ye received the Holy Ghost since ye believed? And they said unto him, We have not so much as heard whether there be any Holy Ghost.*

E. Use 2: For exhortation.

- 1. Believe this doctrine of the Trinity of persons in the unity of essence.
 - a. The Trinity is purely an object of faith.
- 2. Let us give equal reverence to all the persons in the Trinity.
 - a. *[John 5.23]- That all men should honour the Son, even as they honour the Father. He that honoureth not the Son honoureth not the Father which hath sent him.*
- 3. Obey all of the persons in the blessed Trinity; for all of them are God.
 - a. *[John 4.34]- Jesus saith unto them, My meat is to do the will of him that sent me, and to finish his work.*
 - b. *[Deuteronomy 27.10]- Thou shalt therefore obey the voice of the LORD thy God, and do his commandments and his statutes, which I command thee this day.*
 - c. *[Psalm 2.12]- Kiss the Son, lest he be angry, and ye perish from the way, when his wrath is kindled but a little. Blessed are all they that put their trust in him.*
 - d. *[1 John 5.3]- For this is the love of God, that we keep his commandments: and his commandments are not grievous.*
 - e. *[Revelation 4.10-11]- The four and twenty elders fall down before him that sat on the throne, and worship him that liveth for ever and ever, and cast their crowns before the throne, saying, Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honour and power: for thou hast created all things, and for thy pleasure they are and were created.*
 - f. *[Job 33.4]- The spirit of God hath made me, and the breath of the Almighty hath given me life.*

XVI. The Creation.

A. What are the decrees of God?

- 1. The decrees of God are His eternal purpose, according to the counsel of His will, whereby, for His own glory, He has foreordained whatsoever shall come to pass.

B. What is the work of creation?

- 1. It is God's making all things from nothing by the word of His power.
- 2. *[Genesis 1.1]- In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth.*
- 3. *"The creation is the heathen man's Bible, the ploughman's primer, and the traveler's perspective glass, through which he receives a representation of the infinite excellencies which are in God."*
- 4. *[Acts 17.24]- God that made the world and all things therein, seeing that he is Lord of heaven and earth, dwelleth not in temples made with hands;*

C. Two considerations on creation.

- 1. The making of the world.
 - a. God made the world without any pre-existent matter.
 - b. God made the world with a word.
 - 1.) *[Psalm 33.6]- By the word of the LORD were the heavens made; and all the host of them by the breath of his mouth.*

- c. God made all things at first very good.
 - 1.) *[Genesis 1.31]- And God saw every thing that he had made, and, behold, it was very good. And the evening and the morning were the sixth day.*
 - 2.) *[Psalm 8.3]- When I consider thy heavens, the work of thy fingers, the moon and the stars, which thou hast ordained;*
 - 2. The adorning of the world.
 - a. *[Genesis 1.26]- And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness: and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth.*
- D. Concerning man as God's creation.
- 1. The man's body.
 - a. The head.
 - 1.) The fountain of spirits.
 - 2.) The seat of reason.
 - 3.) *"In nature the head is the best piece, but in grace the heart excels."*
 - b. The eye.
 - 1.) The beauty of the face
 - 2.) *"It shines and sparkles like a lesser sun in the body."*
 - 3.) *"The eye occasions much sin, and therefore may well have tears in it."*
 - c. The ear.
 - 1.) The conduit pipe through which knowledge is conveyed.
 - 2.) *[Romans 10.17]- So then faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God.*
 - d. The tongue.
 - 1.) *[Psalm 16.9]- Therefore my heart is glad, and my glory rejoiceth: my flesh also shall rest in hope.*
 - 2.) *[James 1.19]- Wherefore, my beloved brethren, let every man be swift to hear, slow to speak, slow to wrath:*
 - e. The heart.
 - 1.) The noble part
 - 2.) The seat of life.
 - 2. The man's soul.
 - a. The diamond in the ring.
 - b. A vessel of honor in which God Himself is served.
 - c. *"A spark of celestial brightness." – Damascene*
- E. Why did God make the world?
- 1. Negatively.
 - a. Not for Himself for He had no need of it.
 - b. Not for a mansion for us.
 - c. *[John 14.2]- In my Father's house are many mansions: if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you.*
 - d. *"The world is only a passage room to eternity."*
 - e. *"The world is as the wilderness was to Israel, not to rest in, but to travel."*
 - f. *[2 Peter 3.10]- But the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night; in the which the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat, the earth also and the works that are therein shall be burned up.*

2. Positively.
 - a. God made the world to demonstrate His own glory.
 - b. *[Psalm 19.1]- The heavens declare the glory of God; and the firmament sheweth his handywork.*
- F. Use 1: Did God create this world?
1. Convinces us of the truth of His Godhead.
 - a. *[Acts 17.24]- God that made the world and all things therein, seeing that he is Lord of heaven and earth, dwelleth not in temples made with hands;*
 - b. *[Jeremiah 10.11]- Thus shall ye say unto them, The gods that have not made the heavens and the earth, even they shall perish from the earth, and from under these heavens.*
 - c. *[Romans 2.15]- Which shew the work of the law written in their hearts, their conscience also bearing witness, and their thoughts the mean while accusing or else excusing one another;)*
 - d. *[Romans 1.20]- For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse:*
 2. It is a might support of faith that God creates.
 - a. *[Psalm 78.19]- Yea, they spake against God; they said, Can God furnish a table in the wilderness?*
 - b. *[Psalm 124.8]- Our help is in the name of the LORD, who made heaven and earth.*
 - c. *[Psalm 51.18]- Create in me a clean heart, O God; and renew a right spirit within me.*
 - d. *[Isaiah 65.18]- But be ye glad and rejoice for ever in that which I create: for, behold, I create Jerusalem a rejoicing, and her people a joy.*
 3. Then what an evil thing is sin.
 - a. *[Genesis 3.17-19, 24]- And unto Adam he said, Because thou hast hearkened unto the voice of thy wife, and hast eaten of the tree, of which I commanded thee, saying, Thou shalt not eat of it: cursed is the ground for thy sake; in sorrow shalt thou eat of it all the days of thy life; Thorns also and thistles shall it bring forth to thee; and thou shalt eat the herb of the field; In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread, till thou return unto the ground; for out of it wast thou taken: for dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return. So he drove out the man; and he placed at the east of the garden of Eden Cherubims, and a flaming sword which turned every way, to keep the way of the tree of life.*
 - b. *[Romans 5.12]- Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned:*
 4. Did He make everything Good? How much more good is the Creator?
 - a. *"Quicquid efficit tale, illud est magis tale"* the cause is always more noble than the effect.
 - b. *[Colossians 2.3]- In whom are hid all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge.*
- G. Use 2: Of exhortation.
1. Let us wisely observe the works of creation.
 - a. *[Psalm 107.24]- These see the works of the LORD, and his wonders in the deep.*
 - b. *[Psalm 104.24]- O LORD, how manifold are thy works! in wisdom hast thou made them all: the earth is full of thy riches.*
 2. Let us obey our Maker.
 - a. *[Acts 17.28]- For in him we live, and move, and have our being; as certain also of your own poets have said, For we are also his offspring.*

3. Let us keep down pride.
 - a. *[Genesis 3.19]- In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread, till thou return unto the ground; for out of it wast thou taken: for dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return.*
 - b. *[Psalm 139.15]- My substance was not hid from thee, when I was made in secret, and curiously wrought in the lowest parts of the earth.*
 - c. *[Psalm 82.6-7]- I have said, Ye are gods; and all of you are children of the most High. But ye shall die like men, and fall like one of the princes.*
4. Let us never rest until we are restored to God's image again.
 - a. *[Colossians 3.10]- And have put on the new man, which is renewed in knowledge after the image of him that created him:*
 - b. *[Ephesians 4.24]- And that ye put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness.*

XVII. The Providence of God.

A. What are God's works of Providence?

1. *[John 5.17]- But Jesus answered them, My Father worketh hitherto, and I work.*
2. *[Genesis 2.2]- And on the seventh day God ended his work which he had made; and he rested on the seventh day from all his work which he had made.*
3. *[Psalm 103.19]- The LORD hath prepared his throne in the heavens; and his kingdom ruleth over all.*

B. There is providence.

1. *[Proverbs 16.33]- The lot is cast into the lap; but the whole disposing thereof is of the LORD.*

C. What is this providence?

1. *"Providence is God's ordering all issues and events of things, after the counsel of His will, to His own glory."*
 - a. God's ordering things, to distinguish it from all His decrees. God's decrees ordains things that shall fall out, God's providence orders them.
 - b. After the counsel of His own will.
 - c. To His own glory.

2. The providence of God is *Regina mundi*, 'the queen and governess of the world.'

D. Propositions about God's providence.

1. It reaches to all places, persons, and occurrences.
 - a. To all places.
 - 1.) *[Jeremiah 23.23]- Am I a God at hand, saith the LORD, and not a God afar off?*
 - 2.) *[Psalm 107.23-24]- They that go down to the sea in ships, that do business in great waters; These see the works of the LORD, and his wonders in the deep.*
 - b. To all persons.
 - 1.) *[1 Peter 5.7]- Casting all your care upon him; for he careth for you.*
 - 2.) *[Psalm 33.18-19]- Behold, the eye of the LORD is upon them that fear him, upon them that hope in his mercy; To deliver their soul from death, and to keep them alive in famine.*
 - 3.) *[Psalm 34.7]- The angel of the LORD encampeth round about them that fear him, and delivereth them.*
 - 4.) *[Psalm 34.20]- He keepeth all his bones: not one of them is broken.*
 - 5.) *[Psalm 56.8]- Thou tellest my wanderings: put thou my tears into thy bottle: are they not in thy book?*

- 6.) *[Hebrews 11.34]- Quenched the violence of fire, escaped the edge of the sword, out of weakness were made strong, waxed valiant in fight, turned to flight the armies of the aliens.*
 - 7.) *[Psalm 23.5]- Thou preparest a table before me in the presence of mine enemies: thou anointest my head with oil; my cup runneth over.*
 - 8.) *[1 Kings 17.6]- And the ravens brought him bread and flesh in the morning, and bread and flesh in the evening; and he drank of the brook.*
 - 9.) *[Matthew 2.13]- And when they were departed, behold, the angel of the Lord appeareth to Joseph in a dream, saying, Arise, and take the young child and his mother, and flee into Egypt, and be thou there until I bring thee word: for Herod will seek the young child to destroy him.*
 - 10.) *[Psalm 37.3]- Trust in the LORD, and do good; so shalt thou dwell in the land, and verily thou shalt be fed.*
- c. To all affairs and occurrences.
- 1.) *[Psalm 75.7]- But God is the judge: he putteth down one, and setteth up another.*
 - 2.) *[1 Samuel 11.13]- And Saul said, There shall not a man be put to death this day: for to day the LORD hath wrought salvation in Israel.*
 - 3.) *[Psalm 147.9]- He giveth to the beast his food, and to the young ravens which cry.*
 - 4.) *[Matthew 10.30]- But the very hairs of your head are all numbered.*
- d. “Some say, there are many things done in the world which are very disorderly and irregular; and surely God’s providence is not in these things?”
- 1.) Sometimes God’s people are low.
 - a.) Perhaps the hearts of the godly were lifted up with riches.
 - b.) So that their graces may be seen, especially their faith and patience.
 - 2.) The wicked flourish.
 - a.) *[Isaiah 10.7]- Howbeit he meaneth not so, neither doth his heart think so; but it is in his heart to destroy and cut off nations not a few.*
 - b.) *[Habakkuk 1.12]- Art thou not from everlasting, O LORD my God, mine Holy One? we shall not die. O LORD, thou hast ordained them for judgment; and, O mighty God, thou hast established them for correction.*
 - c.) “We are beholden to wicked men, who against their wills do us good.” – Augustine
- e. But, some may say, if God has a hand in ordering all things that fall out, He has a hand in the sins of men?
- 1.) *[Acts 14.16]- Who in times past suffered all nations to walk in their own ways.*
- f. But is it not said that God hardened Pharaoh’s heart? Here is more than barely permitting sin.
- 1.) *[Exodus 8.15]- But when Pharaoh saw that there was respite, he hardened his heart, and hearkened not unto them; as the LORD had said.*
 - 2.) “A man may play upon a jarring instrument, but the jarring is from itself.”
2. Providences, which seem casual and accidental to us; are predetermined by the Lord.
- a. *[1 Kings 22.34]- And a certain man drew a bow at a venture, and smote the king of Israel between the joints of the harness: wherefore he said unto the driver of his chariot, Turn thine hand, and carry me out of the host; for I am wounded.*
3. God’s providence is greatly to be observed, but we are not to make it the rule of our actions.
- a. *[Psalm 107.43]- Whoso is wise, and will observe these things, even they shall understand the lovingkindness of the LORD.*

4. Divine providence is irresistible.
 - a. *[Psalm 105.20]- The king sent and loosed him; even the ruler of the people, and let him go free.*
 - b. *[Ezra 1.2-3]- Thus saith Cyrus king of Persia, The LORD God of heaven hath given me all the kingdoms of the earth; and he hath charged me to build him an house at Jerusalem, which is in Judah. Who is there among you of all his people? his God be with him, and let him go up to Jerusalem, which is in Judah, and build the house of the LORD God of Israel, (he is the God,) which is in Jerusalem.*
 - c. *[Jeremiah 39.11-12]- Now Nebuchadrezzar king of Babylon gave charge concerning Jeremiah to Nebuzaradan the captain of the guard, saying, Take him, and look well to him, and do him no harm; but do unto him even as he shall say unto thee.*
 5. God is to be trusted when his providences seem to run contrary to His promises.
 - a. Pray observe, that the Lord by cross providences often brings to pass His promise.
 - b. God promised to give David the crown, to make him king; but providence ran contrary to His promise yet Saul pursued David.
 - c. Paul's shipwreck. God promised Paul the lives of all that were with him though the storms raged and the ship was broke apart.
 - d. Lineage of the Messiah and the time of His appearing.
 6. The providences of God are chequer-work; they are intermingled.
 - a. The Ark held the rod and the manna, so also providence of God to His people, there is something of the rod and manna.
 - b. *[Psalm 101.1]- I will sing of mercy and judgment: unto thee, O LORD, will I sing.*
 - c. *[Deuteronomy 33.24]- And of Asher he said, Let Asher be blessed with children; let him be acceptable to his brethren, and let him dip his foot in oil.*
 7. The same action, as it comes from God's providence, may be good, and as it comes from men may be evil.
 - a. *[Genesis 50.20]- But as for you, ye thought evil against me; but God meant it unto good, to bring to pass, as it is this day, to save much people alive.*
- E. Use 1: By exhortation.
1. Admire God's providence.
 2. Learn quickly to submit to divine providence.
 - a. *[Psalm 39.9]- I was dumb, I opened not my mouth; because thou didst it.*
 3. Believe that all God's providence shall conspire for your good at last.
 - a. *[Romans 8.28]- And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to his purpose.*
 4. Let it be an antidote against immoderate fear, that nothing comes to pass but what is ordained by God's decree, and ordered by His providence.
 - a. *[Isaiah 37.36]- Then the angel of the LORD went forth, and smote in the camp of the Assyrians a hundred and fourscore and five thousand: and when they arose early in the morning, behold, they were all dead corpses.*
 5. Let the merciful providence of God cause thankfulness.
 - a. *[Deuteronomy 8.18]- But thou shalt remember the LORD thy God: for it is he that giveth thee power to get wealth, that he may establish his covenant which he sware unto thy fathers, as it is this day.*
- F. Use 2: Comfort in respect of the church of God.

1. By giving unexpected mercies to His church, when she looked for nothing but ruin.
 - a. *[Isaiah 27.2]- In that day sing ye unto her, A vineyard of red wine.*
 - b. *[Psalm 126.1]- When the LORD turned again the captivity of Zion, we were like them that dream.*
 2. Strangely, by saving in that very way in which we think He will destroy.
 - a. *[Exodus 1.12]- But the more they afflicted them, the more they multiplied and grew. And they were grieved because of the children of Israel.*
 3. Strangely, in that He makes the enemy to do His work.
 - a. *[2 Chronicles 20.23]- For the children of Ammon and Moab stood up against the inhabitants of mount Seir, utterly to slay and destroy them: and when they had made an end of the inhabitants of Seir, every one helped to destroy another.*
 - b. *[Exodus 12.36]- And the LORD gave the people favour in the sight of the Egyptians, so that they lent unto them such things as they required. And they spoiled the Egyptians.*
- G. Use 3: See here, that which may make us long for the time when the great mystery of God's providence shall be fully unfolded to us.

THE FALL

XVIII. The Covenant of Works

- A. What special act of providence did God exercise towards man in the estate wherein he was created?
1. When God created man, he entered into a covenant of life with him upon condition of perfect obedience, forbidding him to eat from the tree of knowledge upon pain of death.
 - a. *[Genesis 2.16-17]- And the LORD God commanded the man, saying, Of every tree of the garden thou mayest freely eat: But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it: for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die.*
 2. This covenant was made with Adam and all mankind; for Adam was a public person, and representative of the world. For what reason did God make a covenant with Adam and his posterity in innocence?
 - a. To show His sovereignty over us
 - b. To bind Adam fast to Himself.
 3. The conditions of this covenant.
 - a. Adam not to eat of the tree of knowledge; but gave him leave to eat of all of the other trees of the garden.
 - b. As King Pharaoh conditions to Joseph.
 - 1.) *[Genesis 41.40]- Thou shalt be over my house, and according unto thy word shall all my people be ruled: only in the throne will I be greater than thou.*
 - c. The promise was, 'Do this and live.'
 - d. The threatening was, 'Thou shalt die the death.'
 - 1.) A natural death
 - 2.) An eternal death
 - e. Why did God give Adam this law, seeing he foresaw that Adam would transgress it?
 - 1.) It was Adam's fault that he did not keep the law. God gave him a stock of grace to trade with, but by his own neglect he failed.
 - 2.) Though God foresaw Adam would transgress, yet that was not a sufficient reason that no law should be given him; for, by the same reason, God should not have given His written Word to men, to be the rule of faith and manners, because He foresaw that

some would not believe, and others would be profane. Should laws not be made in the land, because some would break them?

- 3.) Though God foresaw Adam would break the law, He knew how to turn it to a greater good in sending Christ.
4. Consider the first covenant.
 - a. The form of the first covenant in innocence was working. 'Do this and live.'
 - 1.) ***[Galatians 3.12]- And the law is not of faith: but, The man that doeth them shall live in them.***
 - 2.) ***Works are not required for the justification of our persons, but as the***
 - 3.) ***[Philippians 2.13]- For it is God which worketh in you both to will and to do of his good pleasure.***
 - b. The covenant of works was very strict.
 - 1.) God required of Adam and all mankind *perfect obedience*.
 - a.) ***[Galatians 3.10]- For as many as are of the works of the law are under the curse: for it is written, Cursed is every one that continueth not in all things which are written in the book of the law to do them.***
 - 2.) God required of Adam and all mankind *personal obedience*.
 - 3.) God required of Adam and all mankind *perpetual obedience*.
 - c. The covenant of works was not built upon a very firm basis; and therefore must needs leave men full of fears and doubts.
 - 1.) Adam was created holy but mutable; having a power to stand and a power to fall.
 - d. The covenant of works being broken by sin, man's condition was very deplorable and desperate.
- B. Use 1: See the character of God and the condition of man.
 1. The condescension of God
 2. The glorious condition man was in, when God entered into a covenant with him.
 - a. ***[Genesis 2.8]- And the LORD God planted a garden eastward in Eden; and there he put the man whom he had formed.***
 - b. ***[Psalm 49.12]- Nevertheless man being in honour abideth not: he is like the beasts that perish.***
 3. Learn from Adam's fall, how unable we are to stand in our own strength.
 4. The sad condition all unbelievers and impenitent persons are in.
 5. The wonderful goodness of God, Who was pleased when man had forfeited the first covenant, to enter into a new covenant with him.
 - a. ***[Hebrews 8.6]- But now hath he obtained a more excellent ministry, by how much also he is the mediator of a better covenant, which was established upon better promises.***
 - b. ***[1 Peter 1.5]- Who are kept by the power of God through faith unto salvation ready to be revealed in the last time.***
 6. Whosoever they are that look for righteousness and salvation by the power of their freewill, or inherent goodness of their nature, or virtue of their merit, as the Socinians and Papists, they are all under the covenant of works.
- C. Use 2: Let us labor by faith to get into the second covenant of grace, and then the curse of the first covenant will be taken away by Christ.

- A. What is Sin?
1. Sin is any want of conformity to the law of God, or transgression of it.
 2. *[1 John 3.4]- Whosoever committeth sin transgresseth also the law: for sin is the transgression of the law.*
 3. Sin is a violation or transgression. To go beyond one's bounds.
 4. The law of God is not the law of an inferior prince, but of Jehovah.
 - a. *[Romans 7.12]- Wherefore the law is holy, and the commandment holy, and just, and good.*
 - b. *"So that there is no reason to break this law, no more for a beast, that is in a fat pasture, to break over the hedge, or to leap into a barren health or quagmire."*
 - c. *[Joshua 7.13]- Up, sanctify the people, and say, Sanctify yourselves against to morrow: for thus saith the LORD God of Israel, There is an accursed thing in the midst of thee, O Israel: thou canst not stand before thine enemies, until ye take away the accursed thing from among you.*
 - d. *[Romans 7.13]- Was then that which is good made death unto me? God forbid. But sin, that it might appear sin, working death in me by that which is good; that sin by the commandment might become exceeding sinful.*
 - e. *[Genesis 19.20]- Behold now, this city is near to flee unto, and it is a little one: Oh, let me escape thither, (is it not a little one?) and my soul shall live.*
 5. The Origin of sin, from whence it comes.
 - a. Its pedigree is from hell.
 - b. *[1 John 3.8]- He that committeth sin is of the devil; for the devil sinneth from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil.*
 - c. Sin is the devil's first-born.
 6. Sin is evil in the nature of it.
 - a. It is a defiling thing.
 - 1.) *[Isaiah 30.22]- Ye shall defile also the covering of thy graven images of silver, and the ornament of thy molten images of gold: thou shalt cast them away as a menstruous cloth; thou shalt say unto it, Get thee hence.*
 - 2.) *[1 Kings 8.38]- What prayer and supplication soever be made by any man, or by all thy people Israel, which shall know every man the plague of his own heart, and spread forth his hands toward this house:*
 - 3.) *[Zechariah 3.3]- Now Joshua was clothed with filthy garments, and stood before the angel.*
 - 4.) *[Zechariah 11.8]- Three shepherds also I cut off in one month; and my soul lothed them, and their soul also abhorred me.*
 - 5.) *[Ezekiel 20.43]- And there shall ye remember your ways, and all your doings, wherein ye have been defiled; and ye shall lothe yourselves in your own sight for all your evils that ye have committed.*
 - 6.) *[Exodus 29.36]- And thou shalt offer every day a bullock for a sin offering for atonement: and thou shalt cleanse the altar, when thou hast made an atonement for it, and thou shalt anoint it, to sanctify it.*
 - 7.) *[2 Corinthians 7.1]- Having therefore these promises, dearly beloved, let us cleanse ourselves from all filthiness of the flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God.*
 - 8.) *[John 6.70]- Jesus answered them, Have not I chosen you twelve, and one of you is a devil?*
 - b. It grieves God's Spirit.
 - 1.) *[Ephesians 4.30]- And grieve not the holy Spirit of God, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption.*

- 2.) *How can the Spirit be said to be grieved? For, seeing He is God, He cannot be subject to any passion.*
 - a.) Grieving is an injury offered to Him.
 - b.) *"Is it not sad to grieve our Comforter?"*
- c. An act of contumacy against God.
 - 1.) *[Leviticus 36.27]- And if ye will not for all this hearken unto me, but walk contrary unto me;*
 - 2.) *Pasha-rebellion*
 - 3.) *[Jeremiah 44.17]- But we will certainly do whatsoever thing goeth forth out of our own mouth, to burn incense unto the queen of heaven, and to pour out drink offerings unto her, as we have done, we, and our fathers, our kings, and our princes, in the cities of Judah, and in the streets of Jerusalem: for then had we plenty of victuals, and were well, and saw no evil.*
 - 4.) *"Sin is Peccatum est Deicidium – God's would-be murderer"*
- d. An act of disingenuity and unkindness.
 - 1.) *[2 Samuel 15.10]- But Absalom sent spies throughout all the tribes of Israel, saying, As soon as ye hear the sound of the trumpet, then ye shall say, Absalom reigneth in Hebron.*
 - 2.) *[2 Samuel 16.17]- And Absalom said to Hushai, Is this thy kindness to thy friend? why wentest thou not with thy friend?*
- e. Sin is a disease.
 - 1.) *[Isaiah 1.5]- Why should ye be stricken any more? ye will revolt more and more: the whole head is sick, and the whole heart faint.*
 - 2.) *[Titus 1.15]- Unto the pure all things are pure: but unto them that are defiled and unbelieving is nothing pure; but even their mind and conscience is defiled.*
 - 3.) *[Psalm 19.10]- More to be desired are they than gold, yea, than much fine gold: sweeter also than honey and the honeycomb.*
 - 4.) *[Isaiah 5.20]- Woe unto them that call evil good, and good evil; that put darkness for light, and light for darkness; that put bitter for sweet, and sweet for bitter!*
- f. Sin is an irrational thing.
 - 1.) *[Hebrews 12.16]- Lest there be any fornicator, or profane person, as Esau, who for one morsel of meat sold his birthright.*
- g. Sin is a painful thing.
 - 1.) *[Jeremiah 9.5]- And they will deceive every one his neighbour, and will not speak the truth: they have taught their tongue to speak lies, and weary themselves to commit iniquity.*
 - 2.) *[Titus 3.3]- For we ourselves also were sometimes foolish, disobedient, deceived, serving divers lusts and pleasures, living in malice and envy, hateful, and hating one another.*
- h. Sin is the only thing God has an antipathy against.
 - 1.) *[Jeremiah 44.4]- Howbeit I sent unto you all my servants the prophets, rising early and sending them, saying, Oh, do not this abominable thing that I hate.*
7. See the evil of sin, in the price paid for it.
 - a. *"O man, consider the greatness of thy sin, by the greatness of the price paid for sin." - Augustine*
 - b. *[Hebrews 9.22]- And almost all things are by the law purged with blood; and without shedding of blood is no remission.*

8. Sin is evil in its effects.
 - a. Sin has degraded us of our honor.
 - 1.) *[Genesis 49.4]- Unstable as water, thou shalt not excel; because thou wentest up to thy father's bed; then defiledst thou it: he went up to my couch.*
 - 2.) *[Daniel 11.21]- And in his estate shall stand up a vile person, to whom they shall not give the honour of the kingdom: but he shall come in peaceably, and obtain the kingdom by flatteries.*
 - b. Sin disquiets the peace of the soul.
 - 1.) *[Isaiah 57.21]- There is no peace, saith my God, to the wicked.*
 - 2.) *[1 John 4.18]- There is no fear in love; but perfect love casteth out fear: because fear hath torment. He that feareth is not made perfect in love.*
 - c. Sin produces all temporal evil.
 - 1.) *[Lamentations 1.8]- Jerusalem hath grievously sinned; therefore she is removed: all that honoured her despise her, because they have seen her nakedness: yea, she sigheth, and turneth backward.*
 - 2.) *[Zechariah 5.4]- I will bring it forth, saith the LORD of hosts, and it shall enter into the house of the thief, and into the house of him that sweareth falsely by my name: and it shall remain in the midst of his house, and shall consume it with the timber thereof and the stones thereof.*
 - d. Sin unrepentant of brings final damnation.
 - 1.) "Sin, without repentance, brings the 'second death,' that is *mors sine morte*, a death always dying."-Bernard
 - 2.) *[Revelation 20.14]- And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death.*
 - 3.) *[Ezekiel 3.3]- And he said unto me, Son of man, cause thy belly to eat, and fill thy bowels with this roll that I give thee. Then did I eat it; and it was in my mouth as honey for sweetness.*
 - 4.) *[Revelation 10.9]- And I went unto the angel, and said unto him, Give me the little book. And he said unto me, Take it, and eat it up; and it shall make thy belly bitter, but it shall be in thy mouth sweet as honey.*
 - 5.) *[Mark 9.44]- Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.*
- B. Use 1: See how deadly an evil sin is, and how strange is it that any one should love it!
 1. *[Psalm 4.2]- O ye sons of men, how long will ye turn my glory into shame? how long will ye love vanity, and seek after leasing? Selah.*
 2. *[Hosea 3.1]- Then said the LORD unto me, Go yet, love a woman beloved of her friend, yet an adulteress, according to the love of the LORD toward the children of Israel, who look to other gods, and love flagons of wine.*
- C. Use 2: Do anything rather than sin.
 1. "In affliction there is *aliquid mellis*, some good. In this lion there is some honey found."
 2. *[Psalm 119.71]- It is good for me that I have been afflicted; that I might learn thy statutes.*
 3. "Utile est anima si in hac area mundi flagellis trituretur corpus"-Augustine
 4. *[Amos 2.13]- Behold, I am pressed under you, as a cart is pressed that is full of sheaves.*
- D. Use 3: Is sin so great an evil? Then how thankful should you be to God, if He has taken away your sin!
 1. *[Zechariah 3.4]- And he answered and spake unto those that stood before him, saying, Take away the filthy garments from him. And unto him he said, Behold, I have caused thine iniquity to pass from thee, and I will clothe thee with change of raiment.*

XX. Adam's Sin

- A. What was the sin whereby our first parents fell from the estate wherein they were created?
1. ***[Genesis 3.6]- And when the woman saw that the tree was good for food, and that it was pleasant to the eyes, and a tree to be desired to make one wise, she took of the fruit thereof, and did eat, and gave also unto her husband with her; and he did eat.***
- B. The sin, by which they fell, was eating the forbidden fruit.
1. Our parents fell from their glorious state of innocence.
 - a. ***[Ecclesiastes 7.29]- Lo, this only have I found, that God hath made man upright; but they have sought out many inventions.***
 - b. His fall was voluntary.
 - 1.) He had a *posse non peccare*, a power not to fall.
 - 2.) Free will was a sufficient shield to repel temptation.
 - 3.) ***[Genesis 1.28]- And God blessed them, and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth.***
 - c. Adam's fall was sudden.
 - d. How long did Adam continue in paradise before he fell?
 - 1.) Tostatus says, he fell the next day.
 - 2.) Pererius says, he fell the eighth day.
 - 3.) Most probable and received opinion is, he fell the very same day in which he was created. So Irenaeus, Cyril, Epiphanius, and many others believe.
 - a.) ***[John 8.44]- Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it.***
 - b.) Adam had not yet eaten of the tree of life.
 - 1.) ***[Genesis 3.22-23]- And the LORD God said, Behold, the man is become as one of us, to know good and evil: and now, lest he put forth his hand, and take also of the tree of life, and eat, and live for ever: Therefore the LORD God sent him forth from the garden of Eden, to till the ground from whence he was taken.***
 - c.) The Hebrew word for 'abide' signifies, 'To stay or lodge all night.'
 - 1.) ***[Psalm 49.12]- Nevertheless man being in honour abideth not: he is like the beasts that perish.***
 - e. Use 1: From Adam's sudden fall learn the weakness of human nature.
 - 1.) ***[Deuteronomy 33.27]- The eternal God is thy refuge, and underneath are the everlasting arms: and he shall thrust out the enemy from before thee; and shall say, Destroy them.***
 - f. Use 2: From Adam's sudden fall, learn how sad it is for a man to be left to himself.
 - 1.) ***[2 Corinthians 12.9]- And he said unto me, My grace is sufficient for thee: for my strength is made perfect in weakness. Most gladly therefore will I rather glory in my infirmities, that the power of Christ may rest upon me.***
 2. The sin by which our first parents fell was eating the forbidden fruit; where, consider two things.
 - a. The occasion of it was the serpent's temptation.
 - 1.) The subtlety of Satan's temptation.

- a.) He dealt all along as an imposter.
 - 1.) *[Genesis 3.4]- And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die:*
 - 2.) *[Genesis 3.5]- For God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil.*
- b.) He set upon our first parents so quickly, before they were confirmed in their obedience.
 - 1.) *[Job 38.7]- When the morning stars sang together, and all the sons of God shouted for joy?*
- c.) His subtlety in tempting was that he set upon Eve first because he thought she was less able to resist.
 - 1.) *[Job 2.9]- Then said his wife unto him, Dost thou still retain thine integrity? curse God, and die.*
 - 2.) *[1 Kings 21.25]- But there was none like unto Ahab, which did sell himself to work wickedness in the sight of the LORD, whom Jezebel his wife stirred up.*
- d.) His subtlety in tempting was in assaulting Eve's faith.
 - 1.) *[Genesis 3.4]- And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die:*
- 2.) Satan's cruelty in tempting.
 - a.) *"As if on the day of Adam's coronation, would dethrone him."*
- b. The heinousness of the sin itself, *"Eating the forbidden fruit."*
 - 1.) In respect of the person that committed it.
 - a.) Adam had excellent and noble endowments.
 - b.) He was illumined with knowledge.
 - c.) He was embellished with holiness.
 - d.) He knew his duty.
 - e.) It was as easy to him to obey God's command as to know it.
 - 2.) The aggravation of the sin. Was it such a great matter to pluck an apple?
 - a.) Sin of incredulity-They did not believe what God had spoken was truth.
 - b.) Sin of unthankfulness-He sinned in the midst of Paradise.
 - c.) Sin of discontent-how wide was Adam's heart, that a whole world could not fill it!
 - d.) Sin of pride-in that he would be like God.
 - e.) Sin of disobedience-how could God endure to see His laws trampled on before His face.
 - f.) Sin of curiosity-Adam would be prying into God's secrets, and tasting what is forbidden.
 - g.) Sin of wantonness-Adam not only had for necessity, but for delight; yet his wanton palate lusted after the forbidden fruit.
 - h.) Sin of sacrilege-a double theft, in taking what wasn't Adam's but also taking that which God had peculiarly enclosed for Himself.
 - i.) Sin of murder-Adam was a public person and by destroying himself, destroyed all of his posterity.
 - j.) Sin of presumption-Adam presumed on God's mercy.
 - 3.) The dreadfulness of the effect. It has corrupted man's nature.

XXI. Original Sin

A. Did all mankind fall in Adam's first transgression?

- 1. *[Romans 5.12]- Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned:*

- B. If when Adam fell, all mankind fell with him; why, when one angel fell, did not all fall?
1. The angels had no relation to one another.
 2. Angels are called morning stars; the stars have no dependence one upon another.
- C. How is Adam's sin made ours?
1. By imputation.
 2. By Propagation.
 - a. **[Psalm 51.5]- Behold, I was shapen in iniquity; and in sin did my mother conceive me.**
 - b. **[2 Kings 5.27]- The leprosy therefore of Naaman shall cleave unto thee, and unto thy seed for ever. And he went out from his presence a leper as white as snow.**
 3. The original concupiscence.
 - a. The 'old man.'-not that it is weak, as old men are, but for it's long standing, and for it's deformity.
 - 1.) **[Ephesians 4.22]- That ye put off concerning the former conversation the old man, which is corrupt according to the deceitful lusts;**
 - b. Called the law of sin.
 - 1.) **[Romans 7.25]- I thank God through Jesus Christ our Lord. So then with the mind I myself serve the law of God; but with the flesh the law of sin.**
- D. In original sin there is something privative, and something positive.
1. Something privative. *Carentia Justitiae debitae*-The lack of that righteousness which should be ours.
 2. Something positive. Original sin has poisoned the spring of our nature, it has turned beauty to leprosy.
 - a. Original sin has become co-natural to us.
 - b. **[2 Peter 2.14]- Having eyes full of adultery, and that cannot cease from sin; beguiling unstable souls: an heart they have exercised with covetous practices; cursed children:**
 - c. An aversion from good. Man has a desire to be happy, yet opposes that which should promote his happiness.
 - d. A propensity to evil.
 - 1.) *"It is grafted in us by nature to sin." Men roll sin as honey under their tongue. "They drink iniquity as water." – Hierocles*
 - 2.) **[Job 15.16]- How much more abominable and filthy is man, which drinketh iniquity like water?**
 - 3.) **[Ephesians 4.19]- Who being past feeling have given themselves over unto lasciviousness, to work all uncleanness with greediness.**
 - 4.) **[Jeremiah 9.5]- And they will deceive every one his neighbour, and will not speak the truth: they have taught their tongue to speak lies, and weary themselves to commit iniquity.**
- E. The nature of original sin.
1. The universality of it.
 - a. **[Isaiah 1.5]- Why should ye be stricken any more? ye will revolt more and more: the whole head is sick, and the whole heart faint.**
 - b. Original sin has depraved the intellectual part.
 - 1.) **[Genesis 1.2]- And the earth was without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters.**
 - 2.) **[Isaiah 5.20]- Woe unto them that call evil good, and good evil; that put darkness for light, and light for darkness; that put bitter for sweet, and sweet for bitter!**
 - 3.) **[Jeremiah 4.14]- O Jerusalem, wash thine heart from wickedness, that thou mayest be saved. How long shall thy vain thoughts lodge within thee?**

- c. Original sin has defiled the heart.
 - 1.) *[Ecclesiastes 9.3]- This is an evil among all things that are done under the sun, that there is one event unto all: yea, also the heart of the sons of men is full of evil, and madness is in their heart while they live, and after that they go to the dead.*
 - d. Original sin has defiled the will.
 - 1.) *[Jeremiah 44.17]- But we will certainly do whatsoever thing goeth forth out of our own mouth, to burn incense unto the queen of heaven, and to pour out drink offerings unto her, as we have done, we, and our fathers, our kings, and our princes, in the cities of Judah, and in the streets of Jerusalem: for then had we plenty of victuals, and were well, and saw no evil.*
 - e. Original sin has defiled the affections
2. The adhesion of original sin.
 - a. *[Romans 7.17]- Now then it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me.*
 - b. *[Joshua 17.12]- Yet the children of Manasseh could not drive out the inhabitants of those cities; but the Canaanites would dwell in that land.*
 3. Original sin retards and hinders us in the exercise of God's worship.
 - a. *[Romans 7.19]- For the good that I would I do not: but the evil which I would not, that I do.*
 - b. *[Hebrews 12.1]- Wherefore seeing we also are compassed about with so great a cloud of witnesses, let us lay aside every weight, and the sin which doth so easily beset us, and let us run with patience the race that is set before us,*
 4. Original sin, though latent in the soul, and as a spring, which runs under ground, often breaks forth unexpectedly.
 - a. *[2 Kings 8.13]- And Hazael said, But what, is thy servant a dog, that he should do this great thing? And Elisha answered, The LORD hath shewed me that thou shalt be king over Syria.*
 - b. *[Matthew 26.34-35]- Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, That this night, before the cock crow, thou shalt deny me thrice. Peter said unto him, Though I should die with thee, yet will I not deny thee. Likewise also said all the disciples.*
 5. Original sin mixes and incorporates itself with our duties and graces.
 - a. With our duties.
 - b. With our graces.
 6. Original sin is a vigorous active principle in us.
 - a. *[Romans 7.15]- For that which I do I allow not: for what I would, that do I not; but what I hate, that do I.*
 7. Original sin is the cause of all actual sin.
 8. It is not perfectly cured in this life.
 - a. *[Daniel 4.23]- And whereas the king saw a watcher and an holy one coming down from heaven, and saying, Hew the tree down, and destroy it; yet leave the stump of the roots thereof in the earth, even with a band of iron and brass, in the tender grass of the field; and let it be wet with the dew of heaven, and let his portion be with the beasts of the field, till seven times pass over him;*
- F. But why does God leave original sin in us after regeneration? He could free us from it if He pleased.

1. To show the power of His grace in the weakest believer.
 2. To make us long for heaven, where there shall be no sin to defile, no devil to tempt.
- G. Use 1: If original sin be propagated in us while we live here, it confutes the Libertines and Quakers.
1. *[Ecclesiastes 7.20]- For there is not a just man upon earth, that doeth good, and sinneth not.*
 2. *[Romans 7.24]- O wretched man that I am! who shall deliver me from the body of this death?*
 3. But does not the apostle say of believers, that their *'old man is crucified;'* *Romans 6.6*, and that they are *'dead to sin?'* *Romans 6.11*
 - a. They are dead to the guilt of it and to the power of it. The love if sin is crucified.
 - b. They are dead to sin legally.
- H. Use 2: Let us lay to heart original sin, and be deeply humbled for it.
- I. Use 3: Let the sense of this make us daily look up to heaven for help.
- J. Use 4: Let original sin make us walk with continual jealousy and watchfulness over our hearts.

XXII. Man's misery by the fall.

- A. What is the misery of that estate whereinto man fell?
1. All mankind by their fall lost communion with God, are under His wrath and curse, and so made liable to all the miseries in this life, to death itself, and to the pains of hell forever.
 2. A two-fold misery.
 - a. Privative. By this first hereditary sin we have lost communion with God.
 - b. Positive.
 - 1.) Under the power of Satan.
 - a.) *[Ephesians 2. 2]- Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience:*
 - b.) *[Psalm 106.41]- And he gave them into the hand of the heathen; and they that hated them ruled over them.*
 - c.) He rules the understanding.
 - 1.) *"Omne peccatum fundatur in ignorantia"*-Every sin is founded upon ignorance.
 - d.) Satan rules the will.
 - 1.) Though he cannot force the will, yet he can, by temptation, draw it.
 - 2.) *[John 8.44]- Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it.*
 - 3.) *[Jeremiah 44.17]- But we will certainly do whatsoever thing goeth forth out of our own mouth, to burn incense unto the queen of heaven, and to pour out drink offerings unto her, as we have done, we, and our fathers, our kings, and our princes, in the cities of Judah, and in the streets of Jerusalem: for then had we plenty of victuals, and were well, and saw no evil.*
 - e.) Use 1: See here our misery by original sin; enslaved to Satan.
 - 1.) *[Ephesians 2.2]- Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience:*
 - 2.) *[Exodus 2.23]- And it came to pass in process of time, that the king of Egypt died: and the children of Israel sighed by reason of the bondage, and they cried, and their cry came up unto God by reason of the bondage.*

- f.) Use 2: Let us labor to get out of this deplorable condition into which sin has plunged us, and get from under the power of Satan.
- 1.) *[Acts 26.18]- To open their eyes, and to turn them from darkness to light, and from the power of Satan unto God, that they may receive forgiveness of sins, and inheritance among them which are sanctified by faith that is in me.*
 - 2.) *[John 8.36]- If the Son therefore shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed.*
- 2.) Heirs of God's wrath.
- a.) *[Psalm 90.11]- Who knoweth the power of thine anger? even according to thy fear, so is thy wrath.*
 - b.) *[Proverbs 19.12]- The king's wrath is as the roaring of a lion; but his favour is as dew upon the grass.*
 - c.) *[Esther 7.7]- And the king arising from the banquet of wine in his wrath went into the palace garden: and Haman stood up to make request for his life to Esther the queen; for he saw that there was evil determined against him by the king.*
 - d.) *[Exodus 9.24]- So there was hail, and fire mingled with the hail, very grievous, such as there was none like it in all the land of Egypt since it became a nation.*
 - e.) *[Ephesians 2.3]- Among whom also we all had our conversation in times past in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling the desires of the flesh and of the mind; and were by nature the children of wrath, even as others.*
 - f.) *[Ephesians 2.12]- That at that time ye were without Christ, being aliens from the commonwealth of Israel, and strangers from the covenants of promise, having no hope, and without God in the world:*
 - g.) *[Hebrews 10.27]- But a certain fearful looking for of judgment and fiery indignation, which shall devour the adversaries.*
 - h.) *[Galatians 3.10]- For as many as are of the works of the law are under the curse: for it is written, Cursed is every one that continueth not in all things which are written in the book of the law to do them.*
 - i.) *[Zechariah 5.3]- Then said he unto me, This is the curse that goeth forth over the face of the whole earth: for every one that stealeth shall be cut off as on this side according to it; and every one that sweareth shall be cut off as on that side according to it.*
 - j.) Use 1: See our misery by the fall. Heirs of wrath.
 - 1.) *[1 Thessalonians 1.10]- And to wait for his Son from heaven, whom he raised from the dead, even Jesus, which delivered us from the wrath to come.*
- 3.) Subject to the miseries of this life.
- a.) *[Romans 8.20]- For the creature was made subject to vanity, not willingly, but by reason of him who hath subjected the same in hope,*
 - b.) *[Job 20.22]- In the fulness of his sufficiency he shall be in straits: every hand of the wicked shall come upon him.*
 - c.) *[Ecclesiastes 1.2]- Vanity of vanities, saith the Preacher, vanity of vanities; all is vanity.*
 - d.) *[Psalm 90.10]- The days of our years are threescore years and ten; and if by reason of strength they be fourscore years, yet is their strength labour and sorrow; for it is soon cut off, and we fly away.*
 - e.) *"Quia est diu vivere nisi diu torqueri"*- Long life is merely long torment.
 - f.) *[Job 5.7]- Yet man is born unto trouble, as the sparks fly upward.*
 - g.) *[1 John 4.18]- There is no fear in love; but perfect love casteth out fear: because fear hath torment. He that feareth is not made perfect in love.*

- h.) *[Habakkuk 1.13]-Thou art of purer eyes than to behold evil, and canst not look on iniquity: wherefore lookest thou upon them that deal treacherously, and holdest thy tongue when the wicked devoureth the man that is more righteous than he?*
 - i.) *[Hebrews 13.2]- Be not forgetful to entertain strangers: for thereby some have entertained angels unawares.*
 - j.) *[2 Chronicles 15.5]- And in those times there was no peace to him that went out, nor to him that came in, but great vexations were upon all the inhabitants of the countries.*
 - k.) *[Romans 5.12]- Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned:*
 - l.) *[Genesis 2.17]- But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it: for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die.*
- 4.) Exposed to hell and damnation.
- a.) The second death.
 - 1.) *[Revelation 20.14]- And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death.*
 - b.) Punishment of loss. “*Paena damni*”
 - 1.) The soul is banished from the beatific presence of God, in Whose presence is fulness of joy
 - c.) Punishment of sense. “*Paena sensus*”
 - 1.) *[John 3.36]- He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life: and he that believeth not the Son shall not see life; but the wrath of God abideth on him.*
 - 2.) *[2 Peter 2.17]- These are wells without water, clouds that are carried with a tempest; to whom the mist of darkness is reserved for ever.*
 - 3.) *[Mark 9.44]- Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.*
 - 4.) *“Ejus adesse intolerabile, ejus abesse impossibile.”*-to bear it will be intolerable, to avoid it will be impossible.
 - 5.) *[Revelation 9.6]- And in those days shall men seek death, and shall not find it; and shall desire to die, and death shall flee from them.*
 - 6.) *[Revelation 14.11]- And the smoke of their torment ascendeth up for ever and ever: and they have no rest day nor night, who worship the beast and his image, and whosoever receiveth the mark of his name.*
 - d.) Use 1: What sad thoughts we have of this primitive original sin, that hath created so many miseries.
 - e.) Use 2: How are all believers bound to Jesus Christ, Who has freed them from that misery to which sin has exposed them!
 - 1.) *[Ephesians 1.7]- In whom we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of his grace;*
 - 2.) *[1 Peter 5.4]- And when the chief Shepherd shall appear, ye shall receive a crown of glory that fadeth not away.*

The Covenant of Grace and its Mediator

XXIII. The Covenant of Grace.

A. Did God leave all mankind to perish in the estate of sin and misery?

1. No! He entered into a covenant of Grace to deliver the elect out of that state, and to bring them into a state of grace by a redeemer.
2. ***[Isaiah 55.3]- Incline your ear, and come unto me: hear, and your soul shall live; and I will make an everlasting covenant with you, even the sure mercies of David.***

B. There is a new covenant ratified between God and the elect.

1. What is the new covenant?
 - a. It is a solemn compact and agreement made between God and fallen man, wherein the Lord undertakes to be our God, and to make us His people.
2. What names are given to the covenant?
 - a. Covenant of peace.
 - 1.) ***[Ezekiel 37.26]- Moreover I will make a covenant of peace with them; it shall be an everlasting covenant with them: and I will place them, and multiply them, and will set my sanctuary in the midst of them for evermore.***
 - b. Covenant of grace.
 - 1.) It was grace, that, when we had forfeited the first covenant, God should enter into a new one, after we had cast away ourselves.
 - 2.) The covenant of grace is "*tabula post naufragium*"-as a plank after shipwreck.
 - 3.) Because it is a royal charter, all made up of terms of grace.
 - a.) ***[Hosea 14.4]- I will heal their backsliding, I will love them freely: for mine anger is turned away from him.***
 - b.) ***[Ezekiel 36.27]- And I will put my spirit within you, and cause you to walk in my statutes, and ye shall keep my judgments, and do them.***
3. Why should God make a covenant with us?
 - a. Out of indulgence, favor, and regard for us.
 - 1.) A covenant is "*insigne honoris*"-a note of distinction between God's people and heathens.
 - 2.) ***[Ezekiel 16.60]- Nevertheless I will remember my covenant with thee in the days of thy youth, and I will establish unto thee an everlasting covenant.***
 - 3.) ***[Genesis 17.2]- And I will make my covenant between me and thee, and will multiply thee exceedingly.***
 - b. To tie us fast to Him.
 - 1.) ***[Ezekiel 20.37]- And I will cause you to pass under the rod, and I will bring you into the bond of the covenant:***
4. How does the covenant of grace differ from the first covenant made with Adam?
 - a. The terms of the first covenant were more strict and severe.
 - 1.) The least failing would have made the covenant with Adam null and void, but many failings do not annul the covenant of grace.
 - a.) ***[Habakkuk 3.2]- O LORD, I have heard thy speech, and was afraid: O LORD, revive thy work in the midst of the years, in the midst of the years make known; in wrath remember mercy.***
 - 2.) The first covenant being broken, allowed a sinner no remedy, all doors of hope were shut; but the new covenant allows the sinner a remedy.
 - a.) ***[Hebrews 12.24]- And to Jesus the mediator of the new covenant, and to the blood of sprinkling, that speaketh better things than that of Abel.***
 - b. The first covenant ran all upon 'working,' the second is upon 'believing.'

- 1.) *[Romans 4.5]- But to him that worketh not, but believeth on him that justifieth the ungodly, his faith is counted for righteousness.*
5. But are not the works required in the covenant of grace?
 - a. Yes. But the covenant of grace does not require works in the same manner as the covenant of works did.
 - 1.) *[Titus 3.8]- This is a faithful saying, and these things I will that thou affirm constantly, that they which have believed in God might be careful to maintain good works. These things are good and profitable unto men.*
 6. What is the condition of the covenant of grace?
 - a. The main condition is faith.
 7. Why is faith more the condition of the new covenant than any other grace?
 - a. To exclude all glorying in the creature.
 - 1.) Faith is a humble grace.
 - 2.) Faith fetches all from Christ, and gives all glory to Christ.
 - b. It excludes desperate presumptuous sinners from the covenant.
- C. Use 1: Of information. See the goodness of God, to enter into covenant with us.
1. *[Jeremiah 3.14]- Turn, O backsliding children, saith the LORD; for I am married unto you: and I will take you one of a city, and two of a family, and I will bring you to Zion:*
- D. Use 2: Of trial. Whether we are in a covenant with God. There are three characters.
1. God's covenant-people are a humble people.
 - a. *[1 Peter 5.5]- Likewise, ye younger, submit yourselves unto the elder. Yea, all of you be subject one to another, and be clothed with humility: for God resisteth the proud, and giveth grace to the humble.*
 - b. *[Philippians 2.3]- Let nothing be done through strife or vainglory; but in lowliness of mind let each esteem other better than themselves.*
 - c. *[Psalm 22.6]- But I am a worm, and no man; a reproach of men, and despised of the people.*
 2. A people in covenant with God are a willing people; though they cannot serve God perfectly, they serve Him willingly.
 - a. *[Psalm 105.3]- Glory ye in his holy name: let the heart of them rejoice that seek the LORD.*
 3. God's covenant people are a consecrated people, they have holiness to the Lord written upon them.
 - a. *[Deuteronomy 7.6]- For thou art an holy people unto the LORD thy God: the LORD thy God hath chosen thee to be a special people unto himself, above all people that are upon the face of the earth.*
- E. Use 3: Of exhortation. To such as are out of covenant, labor to get into covenant, and have God for your God.
1. The misery of such as live and die out of covenant with God.
 - a. *[1 Samuel 28.15]- And Samuel said to Saul, Why hast thou disquieted me, to bring me up? And Saul answered, I am sore distressed; for the Philistines make war against me, and God is departed from me, and answereth me no more, neither by prophets, nor by dreams: therefore I have called thee, that thou mayest make known unto me what I shall do.*

2. The excellency of the covenant of grace. It is a better covenant than the covenant made with Adam.
 - a. It is more friendly and propitious.
 - 1.) *[2 Corinthians 8.12]- For if there be first a willing mind, it is accepted according to that a man hath, and not according to that he hath not.*
 - b. It is surer.
 - 1.) *[2 Samuel 23.5]- Although my house be not so with God; yet he hath made with me an everlasting covenant, ordered in all things, and sure: for this is all my salvation, and all my desire, although he make it not to grow.*
 - c. It has better privileges.
 - 1.) *[Revelation 3.21]- To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me in my throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with my Father in his throne.*
3. I would fain be in covenant with God, but I have been a great sinner, and I fear God will not admit me into covenant
 - a. If you see your sin and loathe yourself for it, God will take you into covenant.
 - 1.) *[Isaiah 43.24-25]- Thou hast bought me no sweet cane with money, neither hast thou filled me with the fat of thy sacrifices: but thou hast made me to serve with thy sins, thou hast wearied me with thine iniquities. I, even I, am he that blotteth out thy transgressions for mine own sake, and will not remember thy sins.*
4. But I am not worthy that God should admit me into a covenant.
 - a. If God should show mercy to none but such as are worthy, then He must show mercy to none.
5. What shall we do that we may be in a covenant with God?
 - a. Seek to God in prayer.
 - 1.) *Exige a Domino Misericordiam* – Demand compassion from the Lord –Augustine
 - 2.) *[Zechariah 13.9]- And I will bring the third part through the fire, and will refine them as silver is refined, and will try them as gold is tried: they shall call on my name, and I will hear them: I will say, It is my people: and they shall say, The LORD is my God.*
 - b. Break off the covenant with sin.
 - 1.) *[1 Samuel 7.3]- And Samuel spake unto all the house of Israel, saying, If ye do return unto the LORD with all your hearts, then put away the strange gods and Ashtaroth from among you, and prepare your hearts unto the LORD, and serve him only: and he will deliver you out of the hand of the Philistines.*
 - c. Get faith in the blood of the covenant.
 - 1.) *[Ephesians 2.13]- But now in Christ Jesus ye who sometimes were far off are made nigh by the blood of Christ.*
- G. Use 4: Of comfort to such as can make out our covenant interest in God.
 1. All your sins are pardoned.
 - a. Pardon is the crowning mercy.
 - b. *[Psalm 103.3]- Who forgiveth all thine iniquities; who healeth all thy diseases;*
 - c. *[Jeremiah 31.33-34]- But this shall be the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel; After those days, saith the LORD, I will put my law in their inward parts, and write it in their hearts; and will be their God, and they shall be my people. And they shall teach no more every man his neighbour, and every man his brother, saying, Know*

the LORD: for they shall all know me, from the least of them unto the greatest of them, saith the LORD: for I will forgive their iniquity, and I will remember their sin no more.

2. All your temporal mercies are fruits of the covenant.
 - a. *[2 Kings 5.23]- And Naaman said, Be content, take two talents. And he urged him, and bound two talents of silver in two bags, with two changes of garments, and laid them upon two of his servants; and they bare them before him.*
 - b. *“As Naaman said to Gehazi, ‘Take two talents,’ so says God to such as are in covenant, take two talents, take health, and take Christ with it; take riches, and take My love with them; take the venison, and take the blessing with it: take two talents.”*
 3. You may upon all occasions plead the covenant.
 4. All things shall co-operate for your good.
 - a. *[Psalm 25.10]- All the paths of the LORD are mercy and truth unto such as keep his covenant and his testimonies.*
 - b. *[Hebrews 12.10]- For they verily for a few days chastened us after their own pleasure; but he for our profit, that we might be partakers of his holiness.*
 5. If thou art in covenant once, then forever in covenant.
 - a. *[Jeremiah 32.40]- And I will make an everlasting covenant with them, that I will not turn away from them, to do them good; but I will put my fear in their hearts, that they shall not depart from me.*
 - b. *[Ephesians 1.22-23]- And hath put all things under his feet, and gave him to be the head over all things to the church, Which is his body, the fulness of him that filleth all in all.*
 - c. *[John 17.21]- That they all may be one; as thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us: that the world may believe that thou hast sent me.*
 6. Thou art in covenant with God, and thou art going to thy God.
 - a. *[Philippians 1.23]- For I am in a strait betwixt two, having a desire to depart, and to be with Christ; which is far better:*
- H. Use 5: Of direction. To show you how you should walk who have tasted a covenant-mercy, live as a people in covenant with God.
1. You must love this God.
 - a. *[Isaiah 62.4]- Thou shalt no more be termed Forsaken; neither shall thy land any more be termed Desolate: but thou shalt be called Hephzibah, and thy land Beulah: for the LORD delighteth in thee, and thy land shall be married.*
 2. Walk holily.
 3. Walk thankfully.
 - a. *[Psalm 103.1]- Bless the LORD, O my soul: and all that is within me, bless his holy name.*
 - b. *“You that have angels’ reward, do angels’ work.”*

XXIV. Christ the Mediator of the Covenant.

A. Proof text

1. *[Hebrews 12.24]- And to Jesus the mediator of the new covenant, and to the blood of sprinkling, that speaketh better things than that of Abel.*

B. The names and titles of Christ.

1. The Savior.
 - a. *[Matthew 1.21]- And she shall bring forth a son, and thou shalt call his name JESUS: for he shall save his people from their sins.*
 - b. *[Acts 4.12]- Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved.*

- c. *[Ruth 1.11]- And Naomi said, Turn again, my daughters: why will ye go with me? are there yet any more sons in my womb, that they may be your husbands?*
 - d. *[Job 28.12-14]- But where shall wisdom be found? and where is the place of understanding? Man knoweth not the price thereof; neither is it found in the land of the living. The depth saith, It is not in me: and the sea saith, It is not with me.*
- 2. The Redeemer.
 - a. *[Isaiah 59.20]- And the Redeemer shall come to Zion, and unto them that turn from transgression in Jacob, saith the LORD.*
 - b. *[Job 19.25]- For I know that my redeemer liveth, and that he shall stand at the latter day upon the earth:*
- 3. The Mediator.
 - a. *[Hebrews 9.24]- For Christ is not entered into the holy places made with hands, which are the figures of the true; but into heaven itself, now to appear in the presence of God for us:*
- C. Two considerations of Christ as our mediator.
 - 1. His Person.
 - a. *[Hebrews 1.3]- Who being the brightness of his glory, and the express image of his person, and upholding all things by the word of his power, when he had by himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high:*
 - b. Christ's person in two natures.
 - 1.) Look upon His human nature as incarnate.
 - a.) Valentinians deny Christ's human nature.
 - b.) *[John 1.14]- And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father,) full of grace and truth.*
 - c.) Why is Christ called the Word?
 - 1.) *"A word is the interpreter of the mind, and reveals what is in a man's breast; so Jesus reveals His Father's mind to us concerning the great matters of our salvation."*
 - 2.) *[John 1.18]- No man hath seen God at any time, the only begotten Son, which is in the bosom of the Father, he hath declared him.*
 - 3.) *[Psalm 103.14]- For he knoweth our frame; he remembereth that we are dust.*
 - 2.) Look upon Christ's divine nature.
 - a.) Christ may be fitly compared to Jacob's ladder, which reacheth from earth to heaven.
 - b.) *[Genesis 28.12]- And he dreamed, and behold a ladder set up on the earth, and the top of it reached to heaven: and behold the angels of God ascending and descending on it.*
 - c.) *[Isaiah 9.6]- For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given: and the government shall be upon his shoulder: and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace.*
 - d.) *[Colossians 2.9]- For in him dwelleth all the fulness of the Godhead bodily.*
 - e.) *[Revelation 1.8]- I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending, saith the Lord, which is, and which was, and which is to come, the Almighty.*
 - f.) *[John 2.25]- And needed not that any should testify of man: for he knew what was in man.*
 - g.) *[John 3.13]- And no man hath ascended up to heaven, but he that came down from heaven, even the Son of man which is in heaven.*
 - 3.) Is Christ eternal?

- a.) *[Isaiah 9.6]- For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given: and the government shall be upon his shoulder: and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace.*
 - b.) *[John 5.23]- That all men should honour the Son, even as they honour the Father. He that honoureth not the Son honoureth not the Father which hath sent him.*
 - c.) *[Hebrews 1.6]- And again, when he bringeth in the firstbegotten into the world, he saith, And let all the angels of God worship him.*
 - d.) *[Colossians 1.16]- For by him were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers: all things were created by him, and for him:*
 - e.) *[Acts 7.59]- And they stoned Stephen, calling upon God, and saying, Lord Jesus, receive my spirit.*
 - f.) *[John 14.1]- Let not your heart be troubled: ye believe in God, believe also in me.*
 - g.) *[Acts 20.28]- Take heed therefore unto yourselves, and to all the flock, over the which the Holy Ghost hath made you overseers, to feed the church of God, which he hath purchased with his own blood.*
- c. Consider Christ's two natures in one person, God-man.
- 1.) *[1 Timothy 3.16]- And without controversy great is the mystery of godliness: God was manifest in the flesh, justified in the Spirit, seen of angels, preached unto the Gentiles, believed on in the world, received up into glory.*
2. His Graces.
- a. *[John 1.14]- And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father,) full of grace and truth.*
 - b. *[John 3.34]- For he whom God hath sent speaketh the words of God: for God giveth not the Spirit by measure unto him.*
- c. Grace in Christ more eminent and glorious in manner.
- 1.) Jesus Christ, our mediator has perfection in every grace.
 - a.) *[Colossians 1.19]- For it pleased the Father that in him should all fulness dwell;*
 - 2.) There is a never-failing fulness of grace in Christ.
 - a.) *[Psalm 31.22]- For I said in my haste, I am cut off from before thine eyes: nevertheless thou heardest the voice of my supplications when I cried unto thee.*
 - b.) *[Genesis 49.23-25]- The archers have sorely grieved him, and shot at him, and hated him: But his bow abode in strength, and the arms of his hands were made strong by the hands of the mighty God of Jacob; (from thence is the shepherd, the stone of Israel:) Even by the God of thy father, who shall help thee; and by the Almighty, who shall bless thee with blessings of heaven above, blessings of the deep that lieth under, blessings of the breasts, and of the womb:*
 - 3.) Grace in Christ is communicative.
 - a.) *[Matthew 25.8-9]- And the foolish said unto the wise, Give us of your oil; for our lamps are gone out. But the wise answered, saying, Not so; lest there be not enough for us and you: but go ye rather to them that sell, and buy for yourselves.*
 - b.) *[John 1.16]- And of his fulness have all we received, and grace for grace.*
 - c.) *[Psalm 87.7]- As well the singers as the players on instruments shall be there: all my springs are in thee.*

- D. Use 1: Admire the glory of this Mediator; He is God-man, He is co-essentially glorious with the Father.
1. *[Revelation 1.16]- And he had in his right hand seven stars: and out of his mouth went a sharp two-edged sword: and his countenance was as the sun shineth in his strength.*
- E. Use 2: If Christ be God-man in one person, then look unto Jesus Christ alone for salvation.
1. *[Philippians 3.9]- And be found in him, not having mine own righteousness, which is of the law, but that which is through the faith of Christ, the righteousness which is of God by faith:*
 2. *[Hebrews 12.2]- Looking unto Jesus the author and finisher of our faith; who for the joy that was set before him endured the cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God.*
 3. *[John 20.31]- But these are written, that ye might believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God; and that believing ye might have life through his name.*
- F. Use 3: Is Jesus Christ God and man in one person? This, as it shows the dignity of believers, that they are nearly related to one of the greatest persons.
1. *[Colossians 2.9]- For in him dwelleth all the fulness of the Godhead bodily.*
- G. Use 4: Admire the love of Christ our Mediator; that He should humble Himself, and take our flesh, that he might redeem us.
1. *[Song of Solomon 1.13]- A bundle of myrrh is my well-beloved unto me; he shall lie all night betwixt my breasts.*

XXV. Christ's Prophetic Office

A. Proof text

1. *[Deuteronomy 18.15]- The LORD thy God will raise up unto thee a Prophet from the midst of thee, of thy brethren, like unto me; unto him ye shall hearken;*

B. Christ's names as Prophet.

1. *[Isaiah 9.6]- For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given: and the government shall be upon his shoulder: and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace.*
2. *[Malachi 3.1]- Behold, I will send my messenger, and he shall prepare the way before me: and the LORD, whom ye seek, shall suddenly come to his temple, even the messenger of the covenant, whom ye delight in: behold, he shall come, saith the LORD of hosts.*
3. *[2 Samuel 22.19]- They prevented me in the day of my calamity: but the LORD was my stay.*
4. *[Revelation 22.16]- I Jesus have sent mine angel to testify unto you these things in the churches. I am the root and the offspring of David, and the bright and morning star.*
5. *[John 4.19]- The woman saith unto him, Sir, I perceive that thou art a prophet.*
6. *[Luke 24.45]- Then opened he their understanding, that they might understand the scriptures,*
7. *[Isaiah 48.17]- Thus saith the LORD, thy Redeemer, the Holy One of Israel; I am the LORD thy God which teacheth thee to profit, which leadeth thee by the way that thou shouldest go.*

C. How does Christ teach?

1. Externally, by His Word.
 - a. *[Psalm 119.105]- Thy word is a lamp unto my feet, and a light unto my path.*
 - b. *[Isaiah 8.20]- To the law and to the testimony: if they speak not according to this word, it is because there is no light in them.*
2. Inwardly by His Spirit.

- a. *[John 16.13]- Howbeit when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall not speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear, that shall he speak: and he will shew you things to come.*
 - b. *[1 Corinthians 2.14]- But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned.*
 - c. *[Romans 12.2]- And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God.*
- D. What are the lessons that Christ teaches?
1. To see our own hearts.
 - a. *[2 Kings 8.13]- And Hazael said, But what, is thy servant a dog, that he should do this great thing? And Elisha answered, The LORD hath shewed me that thou shalt be king over Syria.*
 2. The vanity of the creature.
 - a. *[Ecclesiastes 2.11]- Then I looked on all the works that my hands had wrought, and on the labour that I had laboured to do: and, behold, all was vanity and vexation of spirit, and there was no profit under the sun.*
 - b. *[1 Corinthians 7.31]- And they that use this world, as not abusing it: for the fashion of this world passeth away.*
 3. The Excellency of things unseen.
 - a. *[2 Corinthians 4.18]- While we look not at the things which are seen, but at the things which are not seen: for the things which are seen are temporal; but the things which are not seen are eternal.*
 - b. *[Hebrews 11.27]- By faith he forsook Egypt, not fearing the wrath of the king: for he endured, as seeing him who is invisible.*
 - c. *[Hebrews 11.16]- But now they desire a better country, that is, an heavenly: wherefore God is not ashamed to be called their God: for he hath prepared for them a city.*
- E. How does Christ's teaching differ from other teaching?
1. Christ teaches the heart.
 - a. *[Acts 16.14]- And a certain woman named Lydia, a seller of purple, of the city of Thyatira, which worshipped God, heard us: whose heart the Lord opened, that she attended unto the things which were spoken of Paul.*
 2. Christ gives us a taste of the world.
 - a. *[1 Peter 2.3]- If so be ye have tasted that the Lord is gracious.*
 - b. *[Psalm 34.8]- O taste and see that the LORD is good: blessed is the man that trusteth in him.*
 - c. *[Psalm 119.102-103]- I have not departed from thy judgments: for thou hast taught me. How sweet are thy words unto my taste! yea, sweeter than honey to my mouth!*
 - d. *[2 Corinthians 2.14]- Now thanks be unto God, which always causeth us to triumph in Christ, and maketh manifest the savour of his knowledge by us in every place.*
 3. When Christ teaches, He makes us obey.
 - a. *[Jeremiah 44.17]- But we will certainly do whatsoever thing goeth forth out of our own mouth, to burn incense unto the queen of heaven, and to pour out drink offerings unto her, as we have done, we, and our fathers, our kings, and our princes, in the cities of Judah, and in the streets of Jerusalem: for then had we plenty of victuals, and were well, and saw no evil.*

4. Christ teaches easily.
 - a. *[Isaiah 28.10]- For precept must be upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, and there a little:*
 - b. *[Isaiah 49.4]- Then I said, I have laboured in vain, I have spent my strength for nought, and in vain: yet surely my judgment is with the LORD, and my work with my God.*
 5. When Christ teaches He makes men willing to learn.
 - a. *[Proverbs 1.7]- The fear of the LORD is the beginning of knowledge: but fools despise wisdom and instruction.*
 - b. *[Psalm 110.3]- Thy people shall be willing in the day of thy power, in the beauties of holiness from the womb of the morning: thou hast the dew of thy youth.*
 - c. *[Isaiah 2.3]- And many people shall go and say, Come ye, and let us go up to the mountain of the LORD, to the house of the God of Jacob; and he will teach us of his ways, and we will walk in his paths: for out of Zion shall go forth the law, and the word of the LORD from Jerusalem.*
 - d. *[Acts 10.33]- Immediately therefore I sent to thee; and thou hast well done that thou art come. Now therefore are we all here present before God, to hear all things that are commanded thee of God.*
 6. When Christ teaches, He not only illuminates but animates.
 - a. *[John 13.12]- So after he had washed their feet, and had taken his garments, and was set down again, he said unto them, Know ye what I have done to you?*
 - b. *“Calor et lux con crescunt – heat and light increase together. When Christ comes with light, there is the heat of spiritual life going along with it.”*
- F. Use 1: Of information.
1. See here the argument of Christ’s divinity.
 - a. He only who is God can enlighten the conscience, and make the stony heart bleed.
 2. See what a cornucopia, or plenty of wisdom is in Christ.
 - a. *[Colossians 2.3]- In whom are hid all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge.*
 3. See the misery of the man in the state of nature.
 - a. *[1 Corinthians 8.2]- And if any man think that he knoweth any thing, he knoweth nothing yet as he ought to know.*
 - b. *[Genesis 15.12]- And when the sun was going down, a deep sleep fell upon Abram; and, lo, an horror of great darkness fell upon him.*
 - c. *[John 3.19]- And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil.*
 4. See the happy condition of the children of God.
 - a. *[Isaiah 54.13]- And all thy children shall be taught of the LORD; and great shall be the peace of thy children.*
 - b. *[1 Corinthians 1.30]- But of him are ye in Christ Jesus, who of God is made unto us wisdom, and righteousness, and sanctification, and redemption:*
- G. Use 2: Labour to have Christ for your prophet.
1. See your need of Christ’s teaching.
 - a. *[Revelation 3.18]- I counsel thee to buy of me gold tried in the fire, that thou mayest be rich; and white raiment, that thou mayest be clothed, and that the shame of thy nakedness do not appear; and anoint thine eyes with eyesalve, that thou mayest see.*
 2. Go to Christ to teach you.

- a. *[Psalm 25.5]- Lead me in thy truth, and teach me: for thou art the God of my salvation; on thee do I wait all the day.*
 - b. *[Luke 11.1]- And it came to pass, that, as he was praying in a certain place, when he ceased, one of his disciples said unto him, Lord, teach us to pray, as John also taught his disciples.*
 - c. *[Psalm 13.1]- How long wilt thou forget me, O LORD? for ever? how long wilt thou hide thy face from me?*
 - d. Jesus Christ is very willing to teach us.
 - 1.) *[Matthew 4.23]- And Jesus went about all Galilee, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing all manner of sickness and all manner of disease among the people.*
 - 2.) *[Luke 11.52]- Woe unto you, lawyers! for ye have taken away the key of knowledge: ye entered not in yourselves, and them that were entering in ye hindered.*
 - e. There are none so dull and ignorant but Christ can teach them.
 - 1.) *[Isaiah 35.5]- Then the eyes of the blind shall be opened, and the ears of the deaf shall be unstopped.*
3. Wait upon the means of grace, which God has appointed.
- a. *[Ephesians 4.11]- And he gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers;*
 - b. *[Judges 7.16]- And he divided the three hundred men into three companies, and he put a trumpet in every man's hand, with empty pitchers, and lamps within the pitchers.*
 - c. *[Hebrews 12.25]- See that ye refuse not him that speaketh. For if they escaped not who refused him that spake on earth, much more shall not we escape, if we turn away from him that speaketh from heaven:*
4. If you would have the teachings of Christ, walk according to the knowledge which you have already.
- a. *[John 7.17]- If any man will do his will, he shall know of the doctrine, whether it be of God, or whether I speak of myself.*
- H. Use 3. If you have been taught by Christ savingly, be thankful.
- 1. *[John 9.25]- He answered and said, Whether he be a sinner or no, I know not: one thing I know, that, whereas I was blind, now I see.*
 - 2. *[John 1.18]- No man hath seen God at any time, the only begotten Son, which is in the bosom of the Father, he hath declared him.*

XXVI. Christ's Priestly Office.

- A. How does Christ execute the office of Priest?
- 1. In His once offering up of Himself a sacrifice to satisfy divine justice, and reconcile us to God, and in making continual intercession for us.
 - 2. *[Hebrews 9.26]- For then must he often have suffered since the foundation of the world: but now once in the end of the world hath he appeared to put away sin by the sacrifice of himself.*
- B. What are the parts of Christ's priestly office?
- 1. His Satisfaction.
 - a. His active obedience.
 - 1.) *[Matthew 3.15]- And Jesus answering said unto him, Suffer it to be so now: for thus it becometh us to fulfil all righteousness. Then he suffered him.*
 - b. His passive obedience.

- 1.) *[Hebrews 9.22]- And almost all things are by the law purged with blood; and without shedding of blood is no remission.*
- c. Why was it requisite there should be a priest?
 - 1.) To mediate between a guilty creature and a holy God.
 - d. How could Christ suffer, being God?
 - 1.) Christ suffered only in His human nature.
 - e. But if Christ's humanity suffered, how could this suffering satisfy for sin?
 - 1.) The human nature being united with the divine, the human nature suffered, the divine satisfied.
 - 2.) *[Matthew 23.19]- Ye fools and blind: for whether is greater, the gift, or the altar that sanctifieth the gift?*
 - f. Wherein does the greatness of Christ's sufferings appear?
 - 1.) In the sufferings of His body.
 - a.) *[Philippians 2.8]- And being found in fashion as a man, he humbled himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross.*
 - b.) *[Luke 22.44]- And being in an agony he prayed more earnestly: and his sweat was as it were great drops of blood falling down to the ground.*
 - c.) *[Matthew 27.42]- He saved others; himself he cannot save. If he be the King of Israel, let him now come down from the cross, and we will believe him.*
 - d.) *"Totum pro vulnere corpus – His whole body one great wound."*
 - 2.) In the sufferings of His soul.
 - a.) *[Matthew 14.33]- Then they that were in the ship came and worshipped him, saying, Of a truth thou art the Son of God.*
 - b.) *[Matthew 26.38]- Then saith he unto them, My soul is exceeding sorrowful, even unto death: tarry ye here, and watch with me.*
 - g. Why did Christ suffer?
 - 1.) *[Daniel 9.26]- And after threescore and two weeks shall Messiah be cut off, but not for himself: and the people of the prince that shall come shall destroy the city and the sanctuary; and the end thereof shall be with a flood, and unto the end of the war desolations are determined.*
 - 2.) *[Isaiah 53.6]- All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned every one to his own way; and the LORD hath laid on him the iniquity of us all.*
 - 3.) To fulfill the predictions of Scripture.
 - a.) *[Luke 24.46]- And said unto them, Thus it is written, and thus it behooved Christ to suffer, and to rise from the dead the third day:*
 - 4.) To bring us into favor with God.
 - a.) *[Job 33.26]- He shall pray unto God, and he will be favourable unto him: and he shall see his face with joy: for he will render unto man his righteousness.*
 - 5.) Christ died that He might make His will and testament with His blood.
 - a.) *[Hebrews 9.16]- For where a testament is, there must also of necessity be the death of the testator.*
 - 6.) That He might purchase for us glorious mansions.
 - a.) *[Ephesians 1.14]- Which is the earnest of our inheritance until the redemption of the purchased possession, unto the praise of his glory.*

- b.) *“Crux Christi, clavis Paradisi – the cross of Christ is the ladder by which we ascend to heaven. His crucifixion is our coronation.”*
- h. Use 1: In the bloody sacrifice of Christ, see the horrid nature of sin.
- i. Use 2: Is Christ the priest sacrificed? See God’s mercy and justice.
- 1.) *[Romans 11.22]- Behold therefore the goodness and severity of God: on them which fell, severity; but toward thee, goodness, if thou continue in his goodness: otherwise thou also shalt be cut off.*
 - 2.) The goodness of God in providing a sacrifice.
 - 3.) The severity of God.
 - a.) *[Romans 8.32]- He that spared not his own Son, but delivered him up for us all, how shall he not with him also freely give us all things?*
- j. Use 3: Is Christ our priest, who sacrificed for us? Then see the endeared affection of Christ to us sinners.
- 1.) *“The cross was a pulpit, in which Christ preached the His love to the world.” - Augustine*
 - 2.) *[Romans 5.10]- For if, when we were enemies, we were reconciled to God by the death of his Son, much more, being reconciled, wHebrews 10.14e shall be saved by his life.*
 - 3.) *[Hebrews 10.10]- By the which will we are sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all.*
 - 4.) *[Isaiah 53.11]- He shall see of the travail of his soul, and shall be satisfied: by his knowledge shall my righteous servant justify many; for he shall bear their iniquities.*
 - 5.) *[Ephesians 3.19]- And to know the love of Christ, which passeth knowledge, that ye might be filled with all the fulness of God.*
 - 6.) *[Matthew 27.51]- And, behold, the veil of the temple was rent in twain from the top to the bottom; and the earth did quake, and the rocks rent;*
- k. Use 4: See the excellency of His sacrifice.
- 1.) It is perfect.
 - a.) *[Hebrews 10.14]- For by one offering he hath perfected for ever them that are sanctified.*
 - 2.) It is meritorious.
 - a.) *[2 Samuel 11.21]- Who smote Abimelech the son of Jerubbesheth? did not a woman cast a piece of a millstone upon him from the wall, that he died in Thebez? why went ye nigh the wall? then say thou, Thy servant Uriah the Hittite is dead also.*
 - 3.) It is beneficial.
 - a.) *[Hebrews 10.19]- Having therefore, brethren, boldness to enter into the holiest by the blood of Jesus,*
 - b.) *“Per latus Christi patescit nobis in caelum-Through the side of Christ a way to Heaven lies open to us.”*
- l. Use 5: Let us
- 1.) Apply the blood of Christ.
 - a.) *[Philippians 3.8]- Yea doubtless, and I count all things but loss for the excellency of the knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord: for whom I have suffered the loss of all things, and do count them but dung, that I may win Christ,*
 - 2.) Love a bleeding Saviour.

- a.) *[Hebrews 10.7]- Then said I, Lo, I come (in the volume of the book it is written of me,) to do thy will, O God.*
 - b.) *[Luke 12.50]- But I have a baptism to be baptized with; and how am I straitened till it be accomplished!*
 - m. Use 6: The sacrifice of Christ's blood may infinitely comfort us.
 - 1.) In the case of guilt.
 - a.) *[Matthew 26.28]- For this is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for many for the remission of sins.*
 - 2.) In the case of pollution.
 - a.) *[Isaiah 53.5]- But he was wounded for our transgressions, he was bruised for our iniquities: the chastisement of our peace was upon him; and with his stripes we are healed.*
 - b.) *[Zechariah 13.1]- In that day there shall be a fountain opened to the house of David and to the inhabitants of Jerusalem for sin and for uncleanness.*
 - c.) *[1 John 1.7]- But if we walk in the light, as he is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from all sin.*
 - d.) *[Hebrews 10.29]- Of how much sorer punishment, suppose ye, shall he be thought worthy, who hath trodden under foot the Son of God, and hath counted the blood of the covenant, wherewith he was sanctified, an unholy thing, and hath done despite unto the Spirit of grace?*
 - n. Use 7: Bless God for this precious sacrifice of Christ's death.
 - 1.) *[Psalm 103.1, 4]- Bless the LORD, O my soul: and all that is within me, bless his holy name. Who redeemeth thy life from destruction; who crowneth thee with lovingkindness and tender mercies;*
 - 2.) *[Revelation 5.9]- And they sung a new song, saying, Thou art worthy to take the book, and to open the seals thereof: for thou wast slain, and hast redeemed us to God by thy blood out of every kindred, and tongue, and people, and nation;*
 - 3.) *[2 Corinthians 5.15]- And that he died for all, that they which live should not henceforth live unto themselves, but unto him which died for them, and rose again.*
 - 4.) *[Matthew 2.11]- And when they were come into the house, they saw the young child with Mary his mother, and fell down, and worshipped him: and when they had opened their treasures, they presented unto him gifts; gold, and frankincense and myrrh.*

2. His Intercession.

 - a. *[Romans 8.34]- Who is he that condemneth? It is Christ that died, yea rather, that is risen again, who is even at the right hand of God, who also maketh intercession for us.*
 - b. What are the qualifications of our Intercessor? Holiness, faithfulness and eternal.
 - 1.) He is holy.
 - a.) *[Hebrews 7.26]- For such an high priest became us, who is holy, harmless, undefiled, separate from sinners, and made higher than the heavens;*
 - b.) *[2 Corinthians 5.21]- For he hath made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in him.*
 - 2.) He is faithful.
 - a.) *[Hebrews 2.17]- Wherefore in all things it behoved him to be made like unto his brethren, that he might be a merciful and faithful high priest in things pertaining to God, to make reconciliation for the sins of the people.*
 - b.) *[Hebrews 3.5]- And Moses verily was faithful in all his house, as a servant, for a testimony of those things which were to be spoken after;*

- 3.) He never dies.
 - a.) *[Hebrews 7.23]- And they truly were many priests, because they were not suffered to continue by reason of death:*
 - b.) *[Hebrews 7.25]- Wherefore he is able also to save them to the uttermost that come unto God by him, seeing he ever liveth to make intercession for them.*
- c. Whom does Christ intercede for? For the elect.
 - 1.) *[John 17.9]- I pray for them: I pray not for the world, but for them which thou hast given me; for they are thine.*
 - 2.) *[John 17.20]- Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which shall believe on me through their word;*
 - 3.) *[Numbers 15.30]- But the soul that doeth ought presumptuously, whether he be born in the land, or a stranger, the same reproacheth the LORD; and that soul shall be cut off from among his people.*
- d. What does Christ do in the work of intercession?
 - 1.) He presents the merit of His blood to His Father.
 - a.) *[Leviticus 16.11-16]- And Aaron shall bring the bullock of the sin offering, which is for himself, and shall make an atonement for himself, and for his house, and shall kill the bullock of the sin offering which is for himself: And he shall take a censer full of burning coals of fire from off the altar before the LORD, and his hands full of sweet incense beaten small, and bring it within the vail: And he shall put the incense upon the fire before the LORD, that the cloud of the incense may cover the mercy seat that is upon the testimony, that he die not: And he shall take of the blood of the bullock, and sprinkle it with his finger upon the mercy seat eastward; and before the mercy seat shall he sprinkle of the blood with his finger seven times. Then shall he kill the goat of the sin offering, that is for the people, and bring his blood within the vail, and do with that blood as he did with the blood of the bullock, and sprinkle it upon the mercy seat, and before the mercy seat: And he shall make an atonement for the holy place, because of the uncleanness of the children of Israel, and because of their transgressions in all their sins: and so shall he do for the tabernacle of the congregation, that remaineth among them in the midst of their uncleanness.*
 - 2.) He answers all bills of indictment brought in against the elect.
 - a.) *[Romans 8.33-34]- Who shall lay any thing to the charge of God's elect? It is God that justifieth. Who is he that condemneth? It is Christ that died, yea rather, that is risen again, who is even at the right hand of God, who also maketh intercession for us.*
 - 3.) He calls for acquittance.
 - a.) *[1 John 2.1]- My little children, these things write I unto you, that ye sin not. And if any man sin, we have an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous:*
- e. In what manner does Christ intercede?
 - 1.) Freely.
 - a.) *[John 10.15,18]- As the Father knoweth me, even so know I the Father: and I lay down my life for the sheep. No man taketh it from me, but I lay it down of myself. I have power to lay it down, and I have power to take it again. This commandment have I received of my Father.*
 - 2.) Feelingly.

- a.) *[Hebrews 4.15]- For we have not an high priest which cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities; but was in all points tempted like as we are, yet without sin.*
 - b.) *[Hebrews 2.17]- Wherefore in all things it behoved him to be made like unto his brethren, that he might be a merciful and faithful high priest in things pertaining to God, to make reconciliation for the sins of the people.*
- 3.) Efficaciously.
- a.) The Excellency of His Person.
 - 1.) *[Exodus 32.10]- Now therefore let me alone, that my wrath may wax hot against them, and that I may consume them: and I will make of thee a great nation.*
 - 2.) *[Genesis 32.28]- And he said, Thy name shall be called no more Jacob, but Israel: for as a prince hast thou power with God and with men, and hast prevailed.*
 - 3.) *[James 5.17]- Elias was a man subject to like passions as we are, and he prayed earnestly that it might not rain: and it rained not on the earth by the space of three years and six months.*
 - 4.) *[Matthew 3.17]- And lo a voice from heaven, saying, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.*
 - 5.) *[John 11.42]- And I knew that thou hearest me always: but because of the people which stand by I said it, that they may believe that thou hast sent me.*
 - b.) Christ prays for nothing but which the Father has a mind to grant.
 - 1.) *[1 Thessalonians 4.3]- For this is the will of God, even your sanctification, that ye should abstain from fornication:*
 - c.) Christ prays for nothing but what He has power to give.
 - 1.) *[John 17.24]- Father, I will that they also, whom thou hast given me, be with me where I am; that they may behold my glory, which thou hast given me: for thou lovedst me before the foundation of the world.*
 - d.) Christ's intercession is always ready at hand.
 - 1.) *[Numbers 16.47]- And Aaron took as Moses commanded, and ran into the midst of the congregation; and, behold, the plague was begun among the people: and he put on incense, and made an atonement for the people.*
- f. What are the fruits of Christ's intercession?
- 1.) Justification.
 - a.) Guilt is remitted.
 - b.) Righteousness is imputed.
 - c.) *[Jeremiah 33.16]- In those days shall Judah be saved, and Jerusalem shall dwell safely: and this is the name wherewith she shall be called, The LORD our righteousness.*
 - d.) *[2 Corinthians 5.21]- For he hath made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in him.*
 - e.) *[Romans 8.33-34]- Who shall lay any thing to the charge of God's elect? It is God that justifieth. Who is he that condemneth? It is Christ that died, yea rather, that is risen again, who is even at the right hand of God, who also maketh intercession for us.*
 - 2.) Unction of the Holy Spirit.
 - a.) *[1 John 2.20]- But ye have an unction from the Holy One, and ye know all things.*

- b.) *[2 Peter 1.4]- Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises: that by these ye might be partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust.*
 - c.) *[John 7.39]- (But this spake he of the Spirit, which they that believe on him should receive: for the Holy Ghost was not yet given; because that Jesus was not yet glorified.)*
 - 3.) The purification of our holy things.
 - a.) *[Revelation 8.3]- And another angel came and stood at the altar, having a golden censer; and there was given unto him much incense, that he should offer it with the prayers of all saints upon the golden altar which was before the throne.*
 - b.) *[Leviticus 16.16]- And he shall make an atonement for the holy place, because of the uncleanness of the children of Israel, and because of their transgressions in all their sins: and so shall he do for the tabernacle of the congregation, that remaineth among them in the midst of their uncleanness.*
 - c.) *[Isaiah 64.6]- But we are all as an unclean thing, and all our righteousnesses are as filthy rags; and we all do fade as a leaf; and our iniquities, like the wind, have taken us away.*
 - 4.) Access with boldness unto the throne of grace.
 - a.) *[Hebrews 4.16]- Let us therefore come boldly unto the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy, and find grace to help in time of need.*
 - 5.) Sending the Comforter.
 - a.) *[John 14.16]- And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever;*
 - b.) *[2 Corinthians 1.22]- Who hath also sealed us, and given the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts.*
 - 6.) Perseverance in grace.
 - a.) *[John 17.11]- And now I am no more in the world, but these are in the world, and I come to thee. Holy Father, keep through thine own name those whom thou hast given me, that they may be one, as we are.*
 - b.) *[Luke 22.32]- But I have prayed for thee, that thy faith fail not: and when thou art converted, strengthen thy brethren.*
 - 7.) Absolution at the Day of Judgment.
 - a.) *[John 5.22]- For the Father judgeth no man, but hath committed all judgment unto the Son:*
- C. Use 1: Of instruction.
 - 1. See the constancy of Christ's love to the elect.
 - a. *[John 17.24]- Father, I will that they also, whom thou hast given me, be with me where I am; that they may behold my glory, which thou hast given me: for thou lovedst me before the foundation of the world.*
 - 2. See whence it is that the prayers of the saints are so powerful with God.
 - a. Moses' prayer tied God's hands. *Precibus suis tanquam inquam vinculis ligatum tenuit Deum.* – By his prayers, I say, he held God bound as if by chains.
 - b. *[Exodus 32.10]- Now therefore let me alone, that my wrath may wax hot against them, and that I may consume them: and I will make of thee a great nation.*
 - 3. It shows that a Christian when he prays must chiefly fix his eye on Christ's intercession.

- a. *[Hebrews 9.24]- For Christ is not entered into the holy places made with hands, which are the figures of the true; but into heaven itself, now to appear in the presence of God for us:*
4. The sad condition of an unbeliever.
 - a. *[John 17.9]- I pray for them: I pray not for the world, but for them which thou hast given me; for they are thine.*
 - b. *[Esther 7.3]- Then Esther the queen answered and said, If I have found favour in thy sight, O king, and if it please the king, let my life be given me at my petition, and my people at my request:*
 - c. *“When the devil shows the blackness of their sins, Christ shows the redness of His wounds.”*
5. If Christ makes intercession, then we have nothing to do with other intercessors.
 - a. *[Hebrews 5.6]- As he saith also in another place, Thou art a priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec.*
 - b. *[1 John 2.1-2]- My little children, these things write I unto you, that ye sin not. And if any man sin, we have an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous: And he is the propitiation for our sins: and not for ours only, but also for the sins of the whole world.*
- D. Use 2: Of trial.
 1. If Christ is praying for us, His Spirit is praying in us.
 - a. *[Galatians 4.6]- And because ye are sons, God hath sent forth the Spirit of his Son into your hearts, crying, Abba, Father.*
 - b. *[Romans 8.26]- Likewise the Spirit also helpeth our infirmities: for we know not what we should pray for as we ought: but the Spirit itself maketh intercession for us with groanings which cannot be uttered.*
 2. If we are given to Christ, then he intercedes for us.
 - a. *[John 17.9]- I pray for them: I pray not for the world, but for them which thou hast given me; for they are thine.*
 - b. *“It is one thing for Christ to be given to us, another thing for us to be given to Christ.”*
 - c. How know you that?
 - 1.) *[John 17.20]- Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which shall believe on me through their word;*
- E. Use 3: Of exhortation.
 1. If Christ appears for us in heaven, then we must appear for Him upon earth.
 - a. *“Does He present our names in heaven, and shall not we profess His name on earth?”*
 2. If Christ lays out all His interest for us at the throne of grace, we must lay out all our interest for Him.
 - a. *[Philippians 1.20]- According to my earnest expectation and my hope, that in nothing I shall be ashamed, but that with all boldness, as always, so now also Christ shall be magnified in my body, whether it be by life, or by death.*
 3. Believe in this glorious intercession of Christ.
 - a. *[Romans 8.34]- Who is he that condemneth? It is Christ that died, yea rather, that is risen again, who is even at the right hand of God, who also maketh intercession for us.*
 4. Love your Intercessor.
 - a. *[1 Corinthians 16.22]- Upon the first day of the week let every one of you lay by him in store, as God hath prospered him, that there be no gatherings when I come.*

F. Use 4: Of comfort to believers

1. *Oh! But I am afraid Christ does not intercede for me. I am a sinner; and for whom does intercede?*
 - a. ***[Isaiah 53.12]- Therefore will I divide him a portion with the great, and he shall divide the spoil with the strong; because he hath poured out his soul unto death: and he was numbered with the transgressors; and he bare the sin of many, and made intercession for the transgressors.***
2. *But I have offended my High Priest, by distrusting His blood, abusing His love, grieving His Spirit; and will He ever pray for me?*
 - a. ***[Numbers 16.41,48]- But on the morrow all the congregation of the children of Israel murmured against Moses and against Aaron, saying, Ye have killed the people of the LORD. And he stood between the dead and the living; and the plague was stayed.***
 - b. ***[Luke 23.34]- Then said Jesus, Father, forgive them; for they know not what they do. And they parted his raiment, and cast lots.***
3. *But I am unworthy; what I am, that Christ should intercede for me?*
 - a. Christ's intercession is a work of free grace.
 - b. He looks not at our worthiness, but our wants.
4. *But I am followed by sad temptations.*
 - a. ***[Psalm 42.5]- Why art thou cast down, O my soul? and why art thou disquieted in me? hope thou in God: for I shall yet praise him for the help of his countenance.***
 - b. ***[Luke 22.31-32]- And the Lord said, Simon, Simon, behold, Satan hath desired to have you, that he may sift you as wheat: But I have prayed for thee, that thy faith fail not: and when thou art converted, strengthen thy brethren.***

XXVII. Christ's Kingly Office.

A. How does Christ execute the office of a King?

1. In subduing us to Himself.
2. In ruling and defending us.
3. In restraining and conquering all His and our enemies.
4. *He is of mighty renown, He is a King*
 - a. He has a kingly title.
 - 1.) ***[Isaiah 55.15]- For thus saith the high and lofty One that inhabiteth eternity, whose name is Holy; I dwell in the high and holy place, with him also that is of a contrite and humble spirit, to revive the spirit of the humble, and to revive the heart of the contrite ones.***
 - b. He has His *insignia regalia*, His ensigns of royalty.
 - 1.) Crown.
 - a.) ***[Revelation 6.2]- And I saw, and behold a white horse: and he that sat on him had a bow; and a crown was given unto him: and he went forth conquering, and to conquer.***
 - 2.) Sword.
 - a.) ***[Psalm 40.3]- And he hath put a new song in my mouth, even praise unto our God: many shall see it, and fear, and shall trust in the LORD.***
 - 3.) Scepter.
 - a.) ***[Hebrews 1.8]- But unto the Son he saith, Thy throne, O God, is for ever and ever: a sceptre of righteousness is the sceptre of thy kingdom.***
 - c. Escutcheon, or coat of armor.

1.) *[Revelation 5.5]- And one of the elders saith unto me, Weep not: behold, the Lion of the tribe of Judah, the Root of David, hath prevailed to open the book, and to loose the seven seals thereof.*

d. Throne.

1.) *[Revelation 1.5]- And from Jesus Christ, who is the faithful witness, and the first begotten of the dead, and the prince of the kings of the earth. Unto him that loved us, and washed us from our sins in his own blood,*

2.) *[Hebrews 1.8]- But unto the Son he saith, Thy throne, O God, is for ever and ever: a sceptre of righteousness is the sceptre of thy kingdom.*

e. Heirs.

f. Power.

1.) *[Hebrews 1.6]- And again, when he bringeth in the firstbegotten into the world, he saith, And let all the angels of God worship him.*

B. How came Christ to be King?

1. Not by usurpation but legally.

2. By immediate tenure from heaven.

3. *[Psalm 2.6-7]- Yet have I set my king upon my holy hill of Zion. I will declare the decree: the LORD hath said unto me, Thou art my Son; this day have I begotten thee.*

4. *[John 6.27]- Labour not for the meat which perisheth, but for that meat which endureth unto everlasting life, which the Son of man shall give unto you: for him hath God the Father sealed.*

C. In what sense is Christ King?

1. In reference to His people.

a. To govern them.

1.) *[Matthew 2.6]- And thou Bethlehem, in the land of Judah, art not the least among the princes of Judah: for out of thee shall come a Governor, that shall rule my people Israel.*

2.) Where does Christ rule as King?

a.) His kingdom is spiritual. He rules in the hearts of men.

b.) *[Micah 7.19]- He will turn again, he will have compassion upon us; he will subdue our iniquities; and thou wilt cast all their sins into the depths of the sea.*

3.) What does Christ rule by?

a.) He rules by law.

1.) Laws of faith

a.) *[Genesis 15.6]- And he believed in the LORD; and he counted it to him for righteousness.*

2.) Laws of sanctity

a.) *[1 Peter 1.15]- But as he which hath called you is holy, so be ye holy in all manner of conversation;*

b.) He rules by love.

1.) *[Psalm 110.3]- Thy people shall be willing in the day of thy power, in the beauties of holiness from the womb of the morning: thou hast the dew of thy youth.*

b. To defend His people.

1.) *[Psalm 3.3]- But thou, O LORD, art a shield for me; my glory, and the lifter up of mine head.*

- 2.) *[Daniel 12.1]- And at that time shall Michael stand up, the great prince which standeth for the children of thy people: and there shall be a time of trouble, such as never was since there was a nation even to that same time: and at that time thy people shall be delivered, every one that shall be found written in the book.*
- 3.) *[Psalm 124.2-3]- If it had not been the LORD who was on our side, when men rose up against us: Then they had swallowed us up quick, when their wrath was kindled against us:*
- 4.) *[Isaiah 27.2-3]- In that day sing ye unto her, A vineyard of red wine. I the LORD do keep it; I will water it every moment: lest any hurt it, I will keep it night and day.*
- 5.) *[Exodus 19.4]- Ye have seen what I did unto the Egyptians, and how I bare you on eagles' wings, and brought you unto myself.*
- 6.) *[2 Timothy 4.17]- Notwithstanding the Lord stood with me, and strengthened me; that by me the preaching might be fully known, and that all the Gentiles might hear: and I was delivered out of the mouth of the lion.*
- 7.) *[1 Chronicles 11.14]- And they set themselves in the midst of that parcel, and delivered it, and slew the Philistines; and the LORD saved them by a great deliverance.*
- 8.) *[Psalm 44.4]- Thou art my King, O God: command deliverances for Jacob.*
- 9.) *[Isaiah 45.8]- Drop down, ye heavens, from above, and let the skies pour down righteousness: let the earth open, and let them bring forth salvation, and let righteousness spring up together; I the LORD have created it.*
- 10.) *[Isaiah 60.22]- A little one shall become a thousand, and a small one a strong nation: I the LORD will hasten it in his time.*
- 11.) When is the time that this King will deliver His people?
 - a.) When they are the most humble.
 - b.) When their prayers are most fervent.
 - c.) When their faith is strongest.
 - d.) When their forces are weakest.
 - e.) When their enemies are highest.
 - f.) *[Isaiah 33.2, 8-9]- O LORD, be gracious unto us; we have waited for thee: be thou their arm every morning, our salvation also in the time of trouble.*
- c. Christ is a reward for His people.
 - 1.) *[1 Timothy 4.8]- For bodily exercise profiteth little: but godliness is profitable unto all things, having promise of the life that now is, and of that which is to come.*
 - 2.) *[2 Corinthians 4.17]- For our light affliction, which is but for a moment, worketh for us a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory;*
 - 3.) *[Revelation 2.10]- Fear none of those things which thou shalt suffer: behold, the devil shall cast some of you into prison, that ye may be tried; and ye shall have tribulation ten days: be thou faithful unto death, and I will give thee a crown of life.*
 - 4.) *[1 Peter 5.4]- And when the chief Shepherd shall appear, ye shall receive a crown of glory that fadeth not away.*
2. In reference to His enemies, in subduing and conquering them.
 - a. He pulls down their pride.
 - b. Befools their policy.
 - c. Restrains their malice.
 - d. *[Psalm 110.1]- The LORD said unto my Lord, Sit thou at my right hand, until I make thine enemies thy footstool.*
 - e. *[2 Chronicles 14.11]- And Asa cried unto the LORD his God, and said, LORD, it is nothing with thee to help, whether with many, or with them that have no power: help us, O LORD our God; for we rest on thee, and in thy name we go against this multitude. O LORD, thou art our God; let no man prevail against thee.*

- f. *[2 Chronicles 20.23]- For the children of Ammon and Moab stood up against the inhabitants of mount Seir, utterly to slay and destroy them: and when they had made an end of the inhabitants of Seir, every one helped to destroy another.*
 - g. *[Exodus 15.3]- The LORD is a man of war: the LORD is his name.*
 - h. *[Revelation 5.6]- And I beheld, and, lo, in the midst of the throne and of the four beasts, and in the midst of the elders, stood a Lamb as it had been slain, having seven horns and seven eyes, which are the seven Spirits of God sent forth into all the earth.*
 - i. *[Revelation 6.2]- And I saw, and behold a white horse: and he that sat on him had a bow; and a crown was given unto him: and he went forth conquering, and to conquer.*
 - j. *[Revelation 19.13]- And he was clothed with a vesture dipped in blood: and his name is called The Word of God.*
 - k. *[Revelation 17.12,14]- And the ten horns which thou sawest are ten kings, which have received no kingdom as yet; but receive power as kings one hour with the beast. These shall make war with the Lamb, and the Lamb shall overcome them: for he is Lord of lords, and King of kings: and they that are with him are called, and chosen, and faithful.*
 - l. *[Revelation 14.19-20]- And the angel thrust in his sickle into the earth, and gathered the vine of the earth, and cast it into the great winepress of the wrath of God. And the winepress was trodden without the city, and blood came out of the winepress, even unto the horse bridles, by the space of a thousand and six hundred furlongs.*
- D. Use 1: It is no disparagement to serve Christ; He is a King, and it is no dishonour to be employed in a king's service.
- 1. *[2 Timothy 2.21]- If a man therefore purge himself from these, he shall be a vessel unto honour, sanctified, and meet for the master's use, and prepared unto every good work.*
 - 2. *[1 Peter 2.9]- But ye are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people; that ye should shew forth the praises of him who hath called you out of darkness into his marvellous light;*
 - 3. If Christ be King, it informs us that all matters of fact must one day be brought before Him.
 - a. *[John 5.22]- For the Father judgeth no man, but hath committed all judgment unto the Son:*
 - 4. When we are foiled by corruption we must go to Christ, for he is King.
 - a. *[Psalm 149.8]- To bind their kings with chains, and their nobles with fetters of iron;*
- E. Use 2: Is Christ King of kings? Let all these great ones take heed how they employ their power against Him.
- 1. *[Isaiah 9.6]- For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given: and the government shall be upon his shoulder: and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace.*
 - 2. *[Nahum 1.6]- Who can stand before his indignation? and who can abide in the fierceness of his anger? his fury is poured out like fire, and the rocks are thrown down by him.*
 - 3. *[Psalm 76.12]- He shall cut off the spirit of princes: he is terrible to the kings of the earth.*
- F. Use 3: If Christ be a great king, submit to Him.
- 1. *[Judges 9.15]- And the bramble said unto the trees, If in truth ye anoint me king over you, then come and put your trust in my shadow: and if not, let fire come out of the bramble, and devour the cedars of Lebanon.*
- G. Use 4: Let us admire God's free grace who were once under the power and tyranny of Satan, and now of slaves Christ has made them to become subjects of His Kingdom.
- 1. *[Acts 12.7]- And, behold, the angel of the Lord came upon him, and a light shined in the prison: and he smote Peter on the side, and raised him up, saying, Arise up quickly. And his chains fell off from his hands.*

XXVIII. Christ's Humiliation in His Incarnation.

A. Proof text

1. ***[1 Timothy 3.16]- And without controversy great is the mystery of godliness: God was manifest in the flesh, justified in the Spirit, seen of angels, preached unto the Gentiles, believed on in the world, received up into glory***

B. Wherein did Christ's humiliation consist?

1. In His being born, and that in a low condition, made under the law, undergoing the miseries of this life, the wrath of God, and the cursed death of the cross.
 - a. *"As bread is made of wheat, and wine is made of a grape; so Christ was made of a woman."*
2. How came Christ to be made flesh?
 - a. By His Father's special design.
 - b. ***[Galatians 4.4]- But when the fulness of the time was come, God sent forth his Son, made of a woman, made under the law,***
3. But was there no other way for the restoring of fallen man but that God should take flesh?
 - a. The wise God saw it to be the best way for our redemption.
4. Why was Christ born of a woman?
 - a. That God should fulfill the promise.
 - 1.) ***[Genesis 3.15]- And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; it shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel.***
 - b. That He may roll away that reproach from the woman, which she had contracted by being seduced by the serpent. The woman had made man a sinner; so now, to make him amends, she should bring him a Savior.
5. Why was Christ born of a virgin?
 - a. For decency.
 - 1.) It became not God to have any mother but a maid, and it became not a maid to have any other son but a God.
 - b. For necessity.
 - 1.) Christ's substance might remain pure and immaculate.
 - c. To answer a type.
 - 1.) Melchisedec was a type of Christ, who is said to be 'without father and without mother.'
6. How could Christ be made flesh and blood of a virgin, and yet be without sin? The purest virgin is stained with original sin.
 - a. ***[Luke 1.35]- And the angel answered and said unto her, The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee: therefore also that holy thing which shall be born of thee shall be called the Son of God.***
7. What is meant by the power of the Holy Ghost overshadowing the virgin?
 - a. The Holy Ghost having framed Christ in the virgin's womb, did, in a wonderful manner, unite Christ's human nature to His divine, and so both made one person.
 - b. A mystery, which the angels pry into with adoration.
8. When was the Christ incarnate?

- a. *[Galatians 4.4]- But when the fulness of the time was come, God sent forth his Son, made of a woman, made under the law,*
 - b. The determinate time that God had set.
9. Why was Jesus Christ made flesh?
- a. Free Grace. The *causa prima* – impulsive cause.
 - b. Christ took on our flesh upon Him, that He might take our sins upon Him.
 - 1.) He was *maximus peccator*, the greatest sin having the weight of the sins of the whole world lying upon Him.
 - c. Christ took our flesh that He might make the human nature appear lovely to God, and the divine nature appear lovely to man.
 - d. Jesus Christ united Himself to man, that man might be drawn nearer to God.
- C. Use 1: Of instruction.
- 1. See the infinite love of God the Father; that when we had lost ourselves by sin, God, in the riches of His grace, sent forth His Son, made of a woman, to redeem us.
 - a. Whence Christ came, from heaven and from the richest place in heaven, His Father's bosom, that hive of sweetness.
 - b. To whom Christ came, not to fallen angels but to sinful man.
 - 1.) *[Hebrews 2.16]- For verily he took not on him the nature of angels; but he took on him the seed of Abraham.*
 - c. In what manner He came. He came not in the majesty of a king but He came poor.
 - 1.) *[Luke 2.24]- And to offer a sacrifice according to that which is said in the law of the Lord, A pair of turtledoves, or two young pigeons.*
 - 2.) *[Leviticus 12.8]- And if she be not able to bring a lamb, then she shall bring two turtles, or two young pigeons; the one for the burnt offering, and the other for a sin offering: and the priest shall make an atonement for her, and she shall be clean.*
 - 3.) *[Matthew 17.27]- Notwithstanding, lest we should offend them, go thou to the sea, and cast an hook, and take up the fish that first cometh up; and when thou hast opened his mouth, thou shalt find a piece of money: that take, and give unto them for me and thee.*
 - d. Why He came.
 - 1.) He might take our flesh, and redeem us; that He might instate us into a kingdom.
 - 2.) He was poor, that He might make us rich.
 - a.) *[2 Corinthians 8.9]- For ye know the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, that, though he was rich, yet for your sakes he became poor, that ye through his poverty might be rich.*
 - 3.) He was born of a virgin that we might be born of God.
 - 4.) He took on our flesh that He might give us His Spirit.
 - 5.) He came down from heaven that He might bring us to heaven
 - 6.) *[Ephesians 3.19]- And to know the love of Christ, which passeth knowledge, that ye might be filled with all the fulness of God.*
 - 2. See here the wonderful humility of Christ.
 - a. *[Philippians 2.7]- But made himself of no reputation, and took upon him the form of a servant, and was made in the likeness of men:*
 - b. *[Hebrews 10.20]- By a new and living way, which he hath consecrated for us, through the veil, that is to say, his flesh;*
 - c. *[Philippians 2.6]- Who, being in the form of God, thought it not robbery to be equal with God:*

- d. He took on painful infirmities.
 - 1.) Hunger.
 - a.) *[Matthew 21.18-19]- Now in the morning as he returned into the city, he hungered. And when he saw a fig tree in the way, he came to it, and found nothing thereon, but leaves only, and said unto it, Let no fruit grow on thee henceforward for ever. And presently the fig tree withered away.*
 - 2.) Weariness.
 - a.) *[John 5.6]- When Jesus saw him lie, and knew that he had been now a long time in that case, he saith unto him, Wilt thou be made whole?*
 - 3.) Sorrow.
 - a.) *[Matthew 26.38]- Then saith he unto them, My soul is exceeding sorrowful, even unto death: tarry ye here, and watch with me.*
 - 4.) Fear.
 - a.) *[Hebrews 5.7]- Who in the days of his flesh, when he had offered up prayers and supplications with strong crying and tears unto him that was able to save him from death, and was heard in that he feared;*
- e. He was made in the likeness of sinful flesh.
 - 1.) *[2 Corinthians 5.21]- For he hath made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in him.*
 - 2.) *[Isaiah 53.12]- Therefore will I divide him a portion with the great, and he shall divide the spoil with the strong; because he hath poured out his soul unto death: and he was numbered with the transgressors; and he bare the sin of many, and made intercession for the transgressors.*
 - 3.) *[Hebrews 9.28]- So Christ was once offered to bear the sins of many; and unto them that look for him shall he appear the second time without sin unto salvation.*
- f. From this learn to be humble.
 - 1.) *[1 Corinthians 4.7]- For who maketh thee to differ from another? and what hast thou that thou didst not receive? now if thou didst receive it, why dost thou glory, as if thou hadst not received it?*
 - 2.) *[Leviticus 2.11]- No meat offering, which ye shall bring unto the LORD, shall be made with leaven: for ye shall burn no leaven, nor any honey, in any offering of the LORD made by fire.*
 - 3.) *If God spared not the angels, when they grew proud, will He spare thee, who art but dust and rottenness?- Augustine.*
3. Behold here a sacred riddle or paradox – God manifest in the flesh.
 - a. *“That man was made in God’s image was a wonder, but that God should be made in man’s image is a greater wonder.”*
4. From hence, God manifest in the flesh.
 - a. *[1 Kings 18.38]- Then the fire of the LORD fell, and consumed the burnt sacrifice, and the wood, and the stones, and the dust, and licked up the water that was in the trench.*
 - b. *[Jeremiah 32.27]- Behold, I am the LORD, the God of all flesh: is there any thing too hard for me?*
 - c. *[Zechariah 8.6]- Thus saith the LORD of hosts; If it be marvellous in the eyes of the remnant of this people in these days, should it also be marvellous in mine eyes? saith the LORD of hosts.*
 - d. *[Ephesians 3.20]- Now unto him that is able to do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think, according to the power that worketh in us,*

- e. *[2 Kings 7.1-2]- Then Elisha said, Hear ye the word of the LORD; Thus saith the LORD, To morrow about this time shall a measure of fine flour be sold for a shekel, and two measures of barley for a shekel, in the gate of Samaria. Then a lord on whose hand the king leaned answered the man of God, and said, Behold, if the LORD would make windows in heaven, might this thing be? And he said, Behold, thou shalt see it with thine eyes, but shalt not eat thereof.*
- f. *[Numbers 11.21-23]- And Moses said, The people, among whom I am, are six hundred thousand footmen; and thou hast said, I will give them flesh, that they may eat a whole month. Shall the flocks and the herds be slain for them, to suffice them? or shall all the fish of the sea be gathered together for them, to suffice them? And the LORD said unto Moses, Is the LORD's hand waxed short? thou shalt see now whether my word shall come to pass unto thee or not.*

D. Use 2: Of exhortation.

- 1. Seeing Christ took our flesh, and was born of a virgin, let us labor that He may be spiritually born in our hearts.
 - a. *[Galatians 4.19]- My little children, of whom I travail in birth again until Christ be formed in you,*
 - b. There are spiritual pangs
 - 1.) *[Acts 2.37]- Now when they heard this, they were pricked in their heart, and said unto Peter and to the rest of the apostles, Men and brethren, what shall we do?*
 - c. He makes your heart a heart of flesh.
 - 1.) *[Ezekiel 36.26]- A new heart also will I give you, and a new spirit will I put within you: and I will take away the stony heart out of your flesh, and I will give you an heart of flesh.*
 - d. Their heart is a virgin-heart, in respect of sincerity and sanctity.
 - 1.) *[1 Timothy 1.5]- Now the end of the commandment is charity out of a pure heart, and of a good conscience, and of faith unfeigned:*
 - 2.) *[Hebrews 10.22]- Let us draw near with a true heart in full assurance of faith, having our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience, and our bodies washed with pure water.*
 - e. If Christ is born in thy heart, then it is with thee as in birth.
 - 1.) *[Galatians 2.20]- I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me.*
 - 2.) *[1 Peter 2.2]- As newborn babes, desire the sincere milk of the word, that ye may grow thereby:*
 - 3.) *[Matthew 11.12]- And from the days of John the Baptist until now the kingdom of heaven suffereth violence, and the violent take it by force.*
- 2. As Christ was made in our image, let us labor to be made in His image.
 - a. In disposition.
 - 1.) *[1 Samuel 24.16]- And it came to pass, when David had made an end of speaking these words unto Saul, that Saul said, Is this thy voice, my son David? And Saul lifted up his voice, and wept.*
 - b. In grace.
 - 1.) *[Philippians 2.8]- And being found in fashion as a man, he humbled himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross.*
 - c. In zeal.

- 1.) *[John 2.17]- And his disciples remembered that it was written, The zeal of thine house hath eaten me up.*
- d. In contempt of the world.
 - 1.) *[Luke 12.14]- And he said unto him, Man, who made me a judge or a divider over you?*
- e. In conversation.
 - 1.) *[John 14.30]- Hereafter I will not talk much with you: for the prince of this world cometh, and hath nothing in me.*
 - 2.) *[1 Peter 1.15]- But as he which hath called you is holy, so be ye holy in all manner of conversation;*
3. If Christ was so abased for us; took our flesh, which was a disparagement to Him, mingling dust with gold; if He abased Himself so for us, let us be willing to be abased for Him.
 - a. *[Acts 5.41]- And they departed from the presence of the council, rejoicing that they were counted worthy to suffer shame for his name.*
 - b. *[2 Samuel 6.22]- And I will yet be more vile than thus, and will be base in mine own sight: and of the maidservants which thou hast spoken of, of them shall I be had in honour.*
- E. Use 3: Of comfort.
 1. Jesus Christ, having taken on our flesh, has ennobled our nature.
 2. We are made one with God.
 3. We are made nearer to Himself than angels.
 - a. *[Ephesians 5.30]- For we are members of his body, of his flesh, and of his bones*
 - b. *[Ephesians 1.23]- Which is his body, the fulness of him that filleth all in all.*
 4. The glory given to Christ's human nature shall be put upon believers.

XXIX. Christ's Exaltation.

- A. Proof text
 1. *[Philippians 2.9]- Wherefore God also hath highly exalted him, and given him a name which is above every name:*
- B. Wherein consists Christ exaltation?
 1. In what sense has God exalted Christ? In His human nature.
 2. Ways Christ is exalted.
 - a. In His Titles.
 - 1.) A Lord.
 - a.) *[Acts 19.17]- And this was known to all the Jews and Greeks also dwelling at Ephesus; and fear fell on them all, and the name of the Lord Jesus was magnified.*
 - b.) *[Matthew 28.18]- And Jesus came and spake unto them, saying, All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth.*
 - c.) *[Revelation 1.18]- I am he that liveth, and was dead; and, behold, I am alive for evermore, Amen; and have the keys of hell and of death.*
 - d.) *[Philippians 2.10]- That at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth;*
 - e.) *[Psalm 2.12]- Kiss the Son, lest he be angry, and ye perish from the way, when his wrath is kindled but a little. Blessed are all they that put their trust in him.*
 - 2.) A Prince.

- a.) *[Daniel 12.1]- And at that time shall Michael stand up, the great prince which standeth for the children of thy people: and there shall be a time of trouble, such as never was since there was a nation even to that same time: and at that time thy people shall be delivered, every one that shall be found written in the book.*
 - b.) *[Revelation 1.5]- And from Jesus Christ, who is the faithful witness, and the first begotten of the dead, and the prince of the kings of the earth. Unto him that loved us, and washed us from our sins in his own blood,*
- b. In His Office. Saviour of the World.
 - 1.) *[Acts 5.31]- Him hath God exalted with his right hand to be a Prince and a Saviour, for to give repentance to Israel, and forgiveness of sins.*
 - 2.) *[Luke 1.69]- And hath raised up an horn of salvation for us in the house of his servant David;*
 - 3.) *[Matthew 1.21]- And she shall bring forth a son, and thou shalt call his name JESUS: for he shall save his people from their sins.*
 - 4.) *[1 Thessalonians 1.10]- And to wait for his Son from heaven, whom he raised from the dead, even Jesus, which delivered us from the wrath to come.*
 - 5.) *[Acts 4.12]- Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved.*
 - 6.) *[Revelation 5.9]- And they sung a new song, saying, Thou art worthy to take the book, and to open the seals thereof: for thou wast slain, and hast redeemed us to God by thy blood out of every kindred, and tongue, and people, and nation;*
- c. In His Ascension.
 - 1.) *[Luke 24.51]- And it came to pass, while he blessed them, he was parted from them, and carried up into heaven.*
 - 2.) *[Ephesians 4.10]- He that descended is the same also that ascended up far above all heavens, that he might fill all things.)*
 - 3.) Concerning Christ's Ascension.
 - a.) The manner of His ascension.
 - 1.) He blessed His disciples.
 - a.) *[Luke 24.50-51]- And he led them out as far as to Bethany, and he lifted up his hands, and blessed them. And it came to pass, while he blessed them, he was parted from them, and carried up into heaven.*
 - 2.) He ascended as a conqueror.
 - a.) *[Psalm 68.18]- Thou hast ascended on high, thou hast led captivity captive: thou hast received gifts for men; yea, for the rebellious also, that the LORD God might dwell among them.*
 - b.) The fruit of His ascension.
 - 1.) *[Ephesians 4.8]- Wherefore he saith, When he ascended up on high, he led captivity captive, and gave gifts unto men.*
- d. In His session at God's right hand.
 - 1.) *[Mark 16.19]- So then after the Lord had spoken unto them, he was received up into heaven, and sat on the right hand of God.*
 - 2.) *[Ephesians 1.20]- Which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead, and set him at his own right hand in the heavenly places,*
 - 3.) *[1 Kings 2.19]- Bathsheba therefore went unto king Solomon, to speak unto him for Adonijah. And the king rose up to meet her, and bowed himself unto her, and sat down on his throne, and caused a seat to be set for the king's mother; and she sat on his right hand.*

- 4.) *[Ephesians 4.10]- He that descended is the same also that ascended up far above all heavens, that he might fill all things.)*
- e. In constituting Him Judge of the World.
- 1.) *[John 5.22]- For the Father judgeth no man, but hath committed all judgment unto the Son:*
 - 2.) *[Mark 8.38]- Whosoever therefore shall be ashamed of me and of my words in this adulterous and sinful generation; of him also shall the Son of man be ashamed, when he cometh in the glory of his Father with the holy angels.*
 - 3.) *[Matthew 25.31]- When the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the throne of his glory:*
- C. Use 1: Of information.
1. See the different state of Christ on earth and in Heaven.
 - a. *[Philippians 2.9]- Wherefore God also hath highly exalted him, and given him a name which is above every name:*
 - b. *[John 13.4-5]- He riseth from supper, and laid aside his garments; and took a towel, and girded himself. After that he poureth water into a bason, and began to wash the disciples' feet, and to wipe them with the towel wherewith he was girded.*
 - c. *[Isaiah 53.2]- For he shall grow up before him as a tender plant, and as a root out of a dry ground: he hath no form nor comeliness; and when we shall see him, there is no beauty that we should desire him.*
 - d. *[Hebrews 1.3]- Who being the brightness of his glory, and the express image of his person, and upholding all things by the word of his power, when he had by himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high:*
 2. Was Christ first humbled and then exalted?
 - a. *[Luke 14.11]- For whosoever exalteth himself shall be abased; and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted.*
 - b. *[Matthew 18.4]- Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child, the same is greatest in the kingdom of heaven.*
 3. Christ first suffered, and then was exalted.
 - a. *[2 Timothy 2.12]- If we suffer, we shall also reign with him: if we deny him, he also will deny us:*
 - b. *[Acts 14.22]- Confirming the souls of the disciples, and exhorting them to continue in the faith, and that we must through much tribulation enter into the kingdom of God.*
- D. Use 2: Of comfort.
1. Christ, being so highly exalted, exalted our nature.
 - a. Has ennobled our nature.
 - b. Crowned it with glory.
 - c. Lifted it above angels and archangels
 - d. *[Hebrews 2.9]- But we see Jesus, who was made a little lower than the angels for the suffering of death, crowned with glory and honour; that he by the grace of God should taste death for every man.*
 2. Christ being so exalted at God's right hand, the key of government is laid upon His shoulders.
 3. Christ being at God's right hand, we may be assured He has now finished the work of man's redemption.
 - a. *[Hebrews 10.12]- But this man, after he had offered one sacrifice for sins for ever, sat down on the right hand of God;*
 4. Though Jesus Christ is so highly exalted in glory, yet He is not forgetful of us on earth.

- a. *[Hebrews 4.15]- For we have not an high priest which cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities; but was in all points tempted like as we are, yet without sin.*
5. Christ being exalted at God's right hand is for the comfort of believers, that they may one day be exalted to that place of Glory where He is.
 - a. *[John 17.24]- Father, I will that they also, whom thou hast given me, be with me where I am; that they may behold my glory, which thou hast given me: for thou lovedst me before the foundation of the world.*
 - b. *[John 14.2]- In my Father's house are many mansions: if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you.*
 - c. *[Ephesians 1.22-23]- And hath put all things under his feet, and gave him to be the head over all things to the church, Which is his body, the fulness of him that filleth all in all.*
 - d. *[John 17.22]- And the glory which thou gavest me I have given them; that they may be one, even as we are one:*
 - e. *[Revelation 3.21]- To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me in my throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with my Father in his throne.*
- E. Use 3: Of exhortation. Has God highly exalted Christ? Let us labor to exalt Him in His Person and His Truths.
 1. His Person. Let us exalt Christ in our hearts, adore and love Him.
 - a. By praising and commending Christ, we exalt Him in the esteem of others.
 - b. Exalt Him in our lives, by living holy lives.
 2. His Truths.
 - a. Let us exalt Christ's truths
 - b. Maintain the truths against error.
 - c. Maintain the doctrine of free grace against merit.
 - d. The Deity of Christ against Socinianism.

XXX. Christ the Redeemer.

- A. How does the Spirit apply to us the redemption purchased by Christ?
 1. By working faith in us, and thereby uniting us to Christ in our effectual calling.
 - a. Implied that Christ is the glorious purchaser.
 - 1.) *[Psalm 8.3]- When I consider thy heavens, the work of thy fingers, the moon and the stars, which thou hast ordained;*
 - 2.) *[Luke 1.51]- He hath shewed strength with his arm; he hath scattered the proud in the imagination of their hearts.*
 - 3.) *[Hebrews 9.12]- Neither by the blood of goats and calves, but by his own blood he entered in once into the holy place, having obtained eternal redemption for us.*
 - 4.) *[Ruth 4.4]- And I thought to advertise thee, saying, Buy it before the inhabitants, and before the elders of my people. If thou wilt redeem it, redeem it: but if thou wilt not redeem it, then tell me, that I may know: for there is none to redeem it beside thee; and I am after thee. And he said, I will redeem it.*
 - 5.) How does Christ redeem us? His own blood
 - a.) *[Ephesians 1.7]- In whom we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of his grace;*
 - b.) *[1 Corinthians 6.20]- For ye are bought with a price: therefore glorify God in your body, and in your spirit, which are God's.*
 - 6.) From what does Christ redeem us? From sin.
 - a.) *[Hebrews 9.26]- For then must he often have suffered since the foundation of the world: but now once in the end of the world hath he appeared to put away sin by the sacrifice of himself.*

- 7.) But how are we redeemed from sin? Do we not see corruption stirring in the regenerate; much pride and unmortified passion?
 - a.) Redemption is either *inchoata* or *plena* – begun redemption or perfect redemption.
 - 8.) In what sense has Christ redeemed justified persons from sin?
 - a.) From the guilt of sin, though not from the stain.
 - 1.) ***[Philemon 18]- If he hath wronged thee, or oweth thee ought, put that on mine account;***
 - b.) From the power and regency of sin.
 - 1.) ***[Romans 6.14]- For sin shall not have dominion over you: for ye are not under the law, but under grace.***
 - c.) From the curse due to sin.
 - 1.) ***[Galatians 3.13]- Christ hath redeemed us from the curse of the law, being made a curse for us: for it is written, Cursed is every one that hangeth on a tree:***
 - 2.) ***[Romans 8.1]- There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.***
 - 9.) To what has Christ redeemed us? To a glorious inheritance.
 - a.) ***[1 Peter 1.4]- To an inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled, and that fadeth not away, reserved in heaven for you,***
 - b.) To an inheritance.
 - 1.) ***[Colossians 1.12]- Giving thanks unto the Father, which hath made us meet to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light:***
 - 2.) ***[Revelation 21.23]- And the city had no need of the sun, neither of the moon, to shine in it: for the glory of God did lighten it, and the Lamb is the light thereof.***
 - c.) To an inheritance incorruptible.
 - d.) To an inheritance undefiled.
 - 1.) ***[Revelation 21.19]- And the foundations of the wall of the city were garnished with all manner of precious stones. The first foundation was jasper; the second, sapphire; the third, a chalcedony; the fourth, an emerald;***
 - e.) To an inheritance that fadeth not away.
 - 1.) ***[1 John 3.2]- Beloved, now are we the sons of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be: but we know that, when he shall appear, we shall be like him; for we shall see him as he is.***
 - b. Declared that the Spirit applied to us this purchased redemption, by working faith in us.
- B. Use 1: Of instruction.
1. See into what deplorable condition we had brought ourselves by sin; we had sinned ourselves into slavery.
 2. See in this, as in a transparent glass, the love of Christ to the elect.
 - a. ***[Hebrews 9.22]- And almost all things are by the law purged with blood; and without shedding of blood is no remission.***
- C. Use 2: Of trial.
1. Are we in the number of those that are redeemed by Christ or not?
 - a. Such as are redeemed are reconciled to God. The enmity is taken away.
 - b. Such as are redeemed by Christ are redeemed from the world.

- 1.) *[Galatians 1.4]- Who gave himself for our sins, that he might deliver us from this present evil world, according to the will of God and our Father:*
- 2.) *[Colossians 3.1]- If ye then be risen with Christ, seek those things which are above, where Christ sitteth on the right hand of God.*
- 3.) *[Philippians 3.19]- Whose end is destruction, whose God is their belly, and whose glory is in their shame, who mind earthly things.)*

D. *Use 3: Of comfort to such as are redeemed.*

1. Death shall carry thee to thy redeemer: fear not dying since you cannot be perfectly happy but by dying.

E. *Use 4: Of exhortation.*

1. Long for the time when you shall have a full and perfect redemption in heaven, an eternal jubilee; when you shall be freed not only from the power but from the presence of sin.
2. *[Genesis 41.14]- Then Pharaoh sent and called Joseph, and they brought him hastily out of the dungeon: and he shaved himself, and changed his raiment, and came in unto Pharaoh.*

THE APPLICATION OF REDEMPTION

XXXI. Faith

A. Proof text

1. *[Galatians 2.20]- I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me.*

B. Types of Faith

1. An Historical or dogmatic faith.
 - a. Believing the truths revealed in the Word, because of divine authority.
2. A temporary faith.
 - a. *[Matthew 13.21]- Yet hath he not root in himself, but dureth for a while: for when tribulation or persecution ariseth because of the word, by and by he is offended.*
 - b. *[Jonah 4.10]- Then said the LORD, Thou hast had pity on the gourd, for the which thou hast not laboured, neither madest it grow; which came up in a night, and perished in a night:*
3. A miraculous faith.
 - a. This Judas had, he cast out devils, yet was cast out to the devil.
4. A true justifying faith.
 - a. *[Colossians 2.12]- Buried with him in baptism, wherein also ye are risen with him through the faith of the operation of God, who hath raised him from the dead.*

C. What is justifying faith?

1. Not a bare acknowledgement that Christ is a Savior.
 - a. *[Matthew 8.29]- And, behold, they cried out, saying, What have we to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of God? Art thou come hither to torment us before the time?*
2. Self-renunciation.
 - a. *[Philippians 3.9]- And be found in him, not having mine own righteousness, which is of the law, but that which is through the faith of Christ, the righteousness which is of God by faith:*

3. Reliance. Faith rests on Christ's person.
 - a. *[Song of Solomon 8.5]- Who is this that cometh up from the wilderness, leaning upon her beloved? I raised thee up under the apple tree: there thy mother brought thee forth: there she brought thee forth that bare thee.*
 - b. *[1 John 3.23]- And this is his commandment, That we should believe on the name of his Son Jesus Christ, and love one another, as he gave us commandment.*
 - c. *[Galatians 6.14]- But God forbid that I should glory, save in the cross of our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom the world is crucified unto me, and I unto the world.*
 - d. *[Romans 3.25]- Whom God hath set forth to be a propitiation through faith in his blood, to declare his righteousness for the remission of sins that are past, through the forbearance of God;*
 4. Appropriation. Applying Christ to ourselves or receiving Him.
 - a. *[John 1.12]- But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name:*
- D. How is faith wrought? By the blessed Spirit; Who is called the 'Spirit of Grace'.
1. *[Zechariah 11.10]- And I took my staff, even Beauty, and cut it asunder, that I might break my covenant which I had made with all the people.*
 2. *[Luke 1.51]- He hath shewed strength with his arm; he hath scattered the proud in the imagination of their hearts.*
 3. *[Ephesians 1.19]- And what is the exceeding greatness of his power to us-ward who believe, according to the working of his mighty power,*
- E. Wherein lies the preciousness of faith?
1. It's the chief gospel grace, the head of the graces.
 - a. *[1 John 5.4]- For whatsoever is born of God overcometh the world: and this is the victory that overcometh the world, even our faith.*
 2. It's influence upon all the graces, and setting them to work.
 - a. *[Galatians 5.6]- For in Jesus Christ neither circumcision availeth any thing, nor uncircumcision; but faith which worketh by love.*
 - b. *[Hebrews 6.12]- That ye be not slothful, but followers of them who through faith and patience inherit the promises.*
 3. It's the grace, which God honors to justify and save.
 - a. *[2 Peter 1.1]- Simon Peter, a servant and an apostle of Jesus Christ, to them that have obtained like precious faith with us through the righteousness of God and our Saviour Jesus Christ:*
 - b. *[Romans 5.1]- Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ:*
- F. How does faith justify?
1. "Faith does not justify, as it is a work, which would make a Christ of our faith; but faith justifies, as it lays hold of the object, viz. Christ's merits."
 2. "Faith does not justify as it exercises grace. Faith works by love, but it does not justify as it works by love, but as it applies Christ's merits."
- G. Why should faith save and justify more than any other grace?
1. Because of God's purpose.
 - a. *[Romans 4.20]- He staggered not at the promise of God through unbelief; but was strong in faith, giving glory to God;*

2. Because faith makes us one with Christ.
 - a. *[Ephesians 3.17]- That Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith; that ye, being rooted and grounded in love,*
- H. Use 1: Of exhortation. Let us above all things, labor for faith.
1. *[Ephesians 6.16]- Above all, taking the shield of faith, wherewith ye shall be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked.*
 2. *[Hebrews 11.6]- But without faith it is impossible to please him: for he that cometh to God must believe that he is, and that he is a rewarder of them that diligently seek him.*
 3. *[Ephesians 2.12]- That at that time ye were without Christ, being aliens from the commonwealth of Israel, and strangers from the covenants of promise, having no hope, and without God in the world:*
- I. Use 2: Of trial. Let us try whether we have faith.
- J. How then shall we know a true faith? By its noble effects.
1. Faith is a Christ-prizing grace, it puts a high valuation upon Christ.
 - a. *[1 Peter 2.7]- Unto you therefore which believe he is precious: but unto them which be disobedient, the stone which the builders disallowed, the same is made the head of the corner,*
 - b. *[1 Corinthians 9.1]- Am I am not an apostle? am I not free? have I not seen Jesus Christ our Lord? are not ye my work in the Lord?*
 - c. *[Philippians 3.8]- Yea doubtless, and I count all things but loss for the excellency of the knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord: for whom I have suffered the loss of all things, and do count them but dung, that I may win Christ,*
 2. Faith is a refining grace.
 - a. *[1 Timothy 3.9]- Holding the mystery of the faith in a pure conscience.*
 - b. *[Acts 15.9]- And put no difference between us and them, purifying their hearts by faith.*
 3. Faith is a grace of obedience.
 - a. *[Romans 16.26]- But now is made manifest, and by the scriptures of the prophets, according to the commandment of the everlasting God, made known to all nations for the obedience of faith:*
 - b. *[Hebrews 11.8]- By faith Abraham, when he was called to go out into a place which he should after receive for an inheritance, obeyed; and he went out, not knowing whither he went.*
 4. Faith is an assimilating grace.
 5. True faith grows.
 - a. *[Romans 1.17]- For therein is the righteousness of God revealed from faith to faith: as it is written, The just shall live by faith.*
- K. How may we judge the growth of faith?
1. Growth of faith is judged by strength.
 2. Growth of faith is seen by doing duties in a more spiritual manner, with more fervency.
- L. But I fear I have no faith. Distinguishing between weak faith and no faith.
1. A weak faith may receive a strong Christ.
 2. The promise is not made to strong faith but to true faith.
 - a. *[Matthew 5.3]- Blessed are the poor in spirit: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.*
 3. A weak faith may be fruitful.
 4. Weak faith may be growing.

- a. *[Romans 14.1]- Him that is weak in the faith receive ye, but not to doubtful disputations.*

XXXII. Effectual calling.

A. Proof text

1. *[Romans 8.30]- Moreover whom he did predestinate, them he also called: and whom he called, them he also justified: and whom he justified, them he also glorified.*

B. What is effectual calling?

1. "It is the gracious work of the Spirit, whereby He causes us to embrace Christ freely, as he has offered to us in the gospel."
2. A two-fold call.
 - a. An outward call.
 - 1.) Brings men to a profession of Christ.
 - 2.) *[Matthew 20.16]- So the last shall be first, and the first last: for many be called, but few chosen.*
 - b. An inward call.
 - 1.) Brings men to a possession of Christ.

C. What are the means of this effectual call?

1. *[Psalm 19.1]- The heavens declare the glory of God; and the firmament sheweth his handywork.*
2. *[Micah 6.9]- The LORD's voice crieth unto the city, and the man of wisdom shall see thy name: hear ye the rod, and who hath appointed it.*
3. The preaching of the Word.
 - a. *[1 Samuel 3.6]- And the LORD called yet again, Samuel. And Samuel arose and went to Eli, and said, Here am I; for thou didst call me. And he answered, I called not, my son; lie down again.*
 - b. *[Hebrews 12.25]- See that ye refuse not him that speaketh. For if they escaped not who refused him that spake on earth, much more shall not we escape, if we turn away from him that speaketh from heaven:*
4. The Holy Spirit.
 - a. *[Acts 10.44]- While Peter yet spake these words, the Holy Ghost fell on all them which heard the word.*
 - b. *[Acts 16.14]- And a certain woman named Lydia, a seller of purple, of the city of Thyatira, which worshipped God, heard us: whose heart the Lord opened, that she attended unto the things which were spoken of Paul.*

D. From what does God call men?

1. From sin. Ignorance and unbelief.
 - a. *[1 Peter 1.14]- As obedient children, not fashioning yourselves according to the former lusts in your ignorance:*
 - b. *[Ephesians 5.8]- For ye were sometimes darkness, but now are ye light in the Lord: walk as children of light:*
2. From danger.
3. From out of the world.
 - a. *[John 17.16]- They are not of the world, even as I am not of the world.*
 - b. *[Revelation 2.13]- I know thy works, and where thou dwellest, even where Satan's seat is: and thou holdest fast my name, and hast not denied my faith, even in those days wherein Antipas was my faithful martyr, who was slain among you, where Satan dwelleth.*

- E. To what does God call men?
1. To holiness.
 - a. *[1 Thessalonians 4.7]- For God hath not called us unto uncleanness, but unto holiness.*
 - b. *[Isaiah 63.18]- The people of thy holiness have possessed it but a little while: our adversaries have trodden down thy sanctuary.*
 - c. *[1 John 2.20]- But ye have an unction from the Holy One, and ye know all things.*
 2. To glory.
 - a. *[1 Thessalonians 2.12]- That ye would walk worthy of God, who hath called you unto his kingdom and glory.*
 - b. *[2 Corinthians 4.17]- For our light affliction, which is but for a moment, worketh for us a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory;*
- F. What is the cause of the effectual call? God's electing love?
1. *[Romans 8.30]- Moreover whom he did predestinate, them he also called: and whom he called, them he also justified: and whom he justified, them he also glorified.*
 2. *[Ezekiel 16.6]- And when I passed by thee, and saw thee polluted in thine own blood, I said unto thee when thou wast in thy blood, Live; yea, I said unto thee when thou wast in thy blood, Live.*
 3. *[1 Corinthians 6.11]- And such were some of you: but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God.*
 4. *[Romans 5.6]- For when we were yet without strength, in due time Christ died for the ungodly.*
 5. *[Colossians 1.21]- And you, that were sometime alienated and enemies in your mind by wicked works, yet now hath he reconciled*
- G. What are the qualifications of this call?
1. It is a powerful call.
 - a. "Verba Dei sunt opera, the words of God are works." – Luther
 - b. *[Ephesians 1.19]- And what is the exceeding greatness of his power to us-ward who believe, according to the working of his mighty power,*
 - c. *[Ezekiel 36.27]- And I will put my spirit within you, and cause you to walk in my statutes, and ye shall keep my judgments, and do them.*
 - d. *[Ephesians 2.2]- Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience:*
 2. It is a high calling.
 - a. *[Philippians 3.14]- I press toward the mark for the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus.*
 - b. We are called to high exercises of religion.
 - 1.) To be crucified to the world.
 - 2.) To live by faith.
 - 3.) To do angel's work.
 - 4.) To love God.
 - 5.) To be living organs of His praise.
 - 6.) To hold communion with the Father and the Son.
 - a.) *[1 John 1.3]- That which we have seen and heard declare we unto you, that ye also may have fellowship with us: and truly our fellowship is with the Father, and with his Son Jesus Christ.*
 3. It is an immutable call.
 - a. *[Romans 11.29]- For the gifts and calling of God are without repentance.*

- a. *[2 Timothy 1.9]- Who hath saved us, and called us with an holy calling, not according to our works, but according to his own purpose and grace, which was given us in Christ Jesus before the world began,*
- b. *[Romans 1.7]- To all that be in Rome, beloved of God, called to be saints: Grace to you and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.*
- c. *[1 Peter 1.15]- But as he which hath called you is holy, so be ye holy in all manner of conversation;*

XXXIII. Justification

A. Proof text

1. *[Romans 3.24]- Being justified freely by his grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus:*

B. What is Justification?

1. It is an act of God's free grace, whereby He pardons all of our sins, and accepts us as righteous in His sight, only for the righteousness of Christ, imputed to us, and received by faith alone.

C. What is meant by Justification?

1. *'Verbum forense-* a person arraigned is pronounced righteous, and is openly absolved. God, in justifying a person, pronounces him, and look upon him as if he had not sinned.'
2. What is the source of justification? The free grace of God.
 - a. *'God does not justify us because we are worthy, but by justifying us makes us worthy.'*
3. What is the ground, or that by which a sinner is justified? Christ's satisfaction made to His Father.
4. But how was Christ's satisfaction meritorious, and so sufficient to justify? In respect to His divine nature. As He was man He suffered, as God He satisfied.
 - a. *'By Christ's death and merits, God's justice is more abundantly satisfied than if we had suffered the pains of hell for ever.'*
5. Wherein lies the method of our justification? It is the imputation of Christ's righteousness to us.
 - a. *"Jehovah Tzidkennu – The Lord our Righteousness."*
 - 1.) *[Jeremiah 23.6]- In his days Judah shall be saved, and Israel shall dwell safely: and this is his name whereby he shall be called, THE LORD OUR RIGHTEOUSNESS.*
 - b. *[1 Corinthians 1.30]- But of him are ye in Christ Jesus, who of God is made unto us wisdom, and righteousness, and sanctification, and redemption:*
6. What is the means or instrument of our justification? Faith.
 - a. *[Romans 5.1]- Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ:*
7. What is the efficient cause of our justification? The whole Trinity.
 - a. *[Romans 8.33]- Who shall lay any thing to the charge of God's elect? It is God that justifieth.*
 - b. *[Acts 13.39]- And by him all that believe are justified from all things, from which ye could not be justified by the law of Moses.*
 - c. *[1 Corinthians 6.11]- And such were some of you: but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God.*
8. What is the end of our justification?
 - a. That God may inherit praise.

- 1.) *[Ephesians 1.6]- To the praise of the glory of his grace, wherein he hath made us accepted in the beloved.*
- b. That the justified person may inherit glory.
 - 1.) *[Romans 8.30]- Moreover whom he did predestinate, them he also called: and whom he called, them he also justified: and whom he justified, them he also glorified.*
9. Are we justified from eternity? No.
 - a. By nature we are under a sentence of condemnation.
 - 1.) *[John 3.18]- He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God.*
 - b. The Scripture confines justification to those who believe and repent.
 - 1.) *[Acts 3.19]- Repent ye therefore, and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out, when the times of refreshing shall come from the presence of the Lord.*
- D. Four maxims about Justification
 1. That justification confers a real benefit upon the person justified.
 - a. A robe of righteousness and a crown of righteousness.
 2. All believers are alike justified.
 - a. *'Justificatio non recipit magis et minus – Justification does not apply to some more than to others.'*
 - b. *'Mary Magdalene is as much justified as the Virgin Mary.'*
 3. Whomsoever God justifies, He sanctifies.
 - a. *[1 Corinthians 6.11]- And such were some of you: but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God.*
 4. Justification is *inamissibilis*; it is a fixed permanent thing, it can never be lost.
 - a. *'The Arminians hold an apostasy from justification; today justified, tomorrow unjustified; today a Peter, tomorrow a Judas; today a member of Christ, tomorrow a limb of Satan.'*
- E. Use 1: See from hence, that there is nothing within us that could justify, but something without us; not any righteousness inherent, but imputed
 1. *[Ephesians 2.9]- Not of works, lest any man should boast.*
 2. By example. Abraham
 - a. *[Romans 4.3]- For what saith the scripture? Abraham believed God, and it was counted unto him for righteousness.*
 3. By reason. How can those works justify us which defile us?
 - a. *[Isaiah 64.6]- But we are all as an unclean thing, and all our righteousnesses are as filthy rags; and we all do fade as a leaf; and our iniquities, like the wind, have taken us away.*
 4. But does not the apostle James say that Abraham was justified by works?
 - a. *'Works declare us to be righteous before men, but they do not make us righteous before God.'*
- F. Use 2: Of exhortation
 1. Adore the infinite wisdom and goodness of God that found out a way to justify us by 'rich grace and precious blood.'

- a. *[1 Peter 1.12]- Unto whom it was revealed, that not unto themselves, but unto us they did minister the things, which are now reported unto you by them that have preached the gospel unto you with the Holy Ghost sent down from heaven; which things the angels desire to look into.*
- 2. Labor for this high privilege of justification.
 - a. Consider the necessity of being justified.
 - 1.) *[Romans 8.30]- Moreover whom he did predestinate, them he also called: and whom he called, them he also justified: and whom he justified, them he also glorified.*
 - b. Consider the utility and the benefit.
 - 1.) *[Romans 5.1]- Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ:*
 - 2.) *[Romans 8.33-34]- Who shall lay any thing to the charge of God's elect? It is God that justifieth. Who is he that condemneth? It is Christ that died, yea rather, that is risen again, who is even at the right hand of God, who also maketh intercession for us.*
 - 3.) *[Acts 13.39]- And by him all that believe are justified from all things, from which ye could not be justified by the law of Moses.*
 - 4.) *[Romans 3.25]- Whom God hath set forth to be a propitiation through faith in his blood, to declare his righteousness for the remission of sins that are past, through the forbearance of God;*
- G. Use 3: Comfort to the justified
 - 1. In case of failings.
 - a. Though believers should be humbled under their defects, they should not despond.
 - 2. In case of hard censures.
 - a. The world censures the godly as hypocritical and proud, and the troublers of Israel; but though men censure and condemn the godly, yet God has justified them.

XXXIV. Adoption.

- A. Proof text
 - 1. *[John 1.12]- But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name:*
- B. Our sonship differs from Christ's
 - 1. By Creation.
 - a. *[Acts 17.28]- For in him we live, and move, and have our being; as certain also of your own poets have said, For we are also his offspring.*
 - b. This is no privilege; for men have God for their Father by creation, and yet have the devil for their father.
 - 2. By adoption.
 - a. *[John 1.12]- But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name:*
- C. Adoption is twofold
 - 1. External and federal.
 - a. *[Matthew 8.12]- But the children of the kingdom shall be cast out into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.*
 - 2. Real and gracious.
 - a. They are God's favorites and are heirs of glory.

D. Three positions of adoption

1. Adoption takes in all nations.
 - a. *[Romans 9.4]- Who are Israelites; to whom pertaineth the adoption, and the glory, and the covenants, and the giving of the law, and the service of God, and the promises;*
 - b. *[Acts 10.35]- But in every nation he that feareth him, and worketh righteousness, is accepted with him.*
2. Adoption takes in both sexes.
 - a. *[2 Corinthians 6.18]- And will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be my sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty.*
3. Adoption is an act of pure grace.
 - a. *[Ephesians 1.5]- Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will,*
 - b. *[John 14.22]- Judas saith unto him, not Iscariot, Lord, how is it that thou wilt manifest thyself unto us, and not unto the world?*

E. Questions on Adoption

1. What is this filiation or adoption? It is taking a stranger into the relation of a son and heir.
 - a. *[Exodus 2.10]- And the child grew, and she brought him unto Pharaoh's daughter, and he became her son. And she called his name Moses: and she said, Because I drew him out of the water.*
 - b. *[Esther 2.7]- And he brought up Hadassah, that is, Esther, his uncle's daughter: for she had neither father nor mother, and the maid was fair and beautiful; whom Mordecai, when her father and mother were dead, took for his own daughter.*
 - c. God ennobles us with His Name.
 - 1.) *[Revelation 3.12]- Him that overcometh will I make a pillar in the temple of my God, and he shall go no more out: and I will write upon him the name of my God, and the name of the city of my God, which is new Jerusalem, which cometh down out of heaven from my God: and I will write upon him my new name.*
 - d. God consecrates us with His Spirit.
 - 1.) *[2 Peter 1.4]- Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises: that by these ye might be partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust.*
2. From what state does God take us when He adopts us? From a state of sin and misery.
 - a. *[Ezekiel 16.6]- And when I passed by thee, and saw thee polluted in thine own blood, I said unto thee when thou wast in thy blood, Live; yea, I said unto thee when thou wast in thy blood, Live.*
3. To what does God adopt us?
 - a. He adopts us to a state of excellence.
 - 1.) *"It were much for God to take a clod of dust, and make it a star; it is more for him to take a piece of clay and sin, and adopt it for His heir."*
 - b. God adopts us to a state of liberty.
 - 1.) *[Galatians 4.7]- Wherefore thou art no more a servant, but a son; and if a son, then an heir of God through Christ.*

- 2.) *[Isaiah 56.7]- Even them will I bring to my holy mountain, and make them joyful in my house of prayer: their burnt offerings and their sacrifices shall be accepted upon mine altar; for mine house shall be called an house of prayer for all people.*
- c. God adopts us to a state of dignity.
- 1.) *[Isaiah 43.4]- Since thou wast precious in my sight, thou hast been honourable, and I have loved thee: therefore will I give men for thee, and people for thy life.*
 - 2.) *[Exodus 19.5]- Now therefore, if ye will obey my voice indeed, and keep my covenant, then ye shall be a peculiar treasure unto me above all people: for all the earth is mine:*
 - 3.) *[Malachi 3.17]- And they shall be mine, saith the LORD of hosts, in that day when I make up my jewels; and I will spare them, as a man spareth his own son that serveth him.*
 - 4.) *[Hebrews 12.23]- To the general assembly and church of the firstborn, which are written in heaven, and to God the Judge of all, and to the spirits of just men made perfect,*
 - 5.) *[Hebrews 1.14]- Are they not all ministering spirits, sent forth to minister for them who shall be heirs of salvation?*
 - 6.) *[1 John 3.9]- Whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin; for his seed remaineth in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God.*
 - 7.) *[Proverbs 28.1]- The wicked flee when no man pursueth: but the righteous are bold as a lion.*
 - 8.) *[Song of Solomon 2.14]- O my dove, that art in the clefts of the rock, in the secret places of the stairs, let me see thy countenance, let me hear thy voice; for sweet is thy voice, and thy countenance is comely.*
 - 9.) *[Isaiah 40.31]- But they that wait upon the LORD shall renew their strength; they shall mount up with wings as eagles; they shall run, and not be weary; and they shall walk, and not faint.*
- d. God adopts us to an inheritance. The kingdom God gives His adopted sons and heirs excels all earthly monarchies.
- 1.) *[Luke 12.32]- Fear not, little flock; for it is your Father's good pleasure to give you the kingdom.*
 - 2.) In riches.
 - a.) *[Revelation 21.21]- And the twelve gates were twelve pearls: every several gate was of one pearl: and the street of the city was pure gold, as it were transparent glass.*
 - 3.) In tranquility.
 - a.) *'Pax una triumphis innumeris melior'* – One peace is better than innumerable triumphs.
 - b.) *[Revelation 14.2]- And I heard a voice from heaven, as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of a great thunder: and I heard the voice of harpers harping with their harps:*
 - 4.) In stability.
 - a.) *[Hebrews 12.28]- Wherefore we receiving a kingdom which cannot be moved, let us have grace, whereby we may serve God acceptably with reverence and godly fear:*
 - b.) *[Revelation 22.5]- And there shall be no night there; and they need no candle, neither light of the sun; for the Lord God giveth them light: and they shall reign for ever and ever.*
4. What is the organic or instrumental cause of adoption? Faith.

- a. *[Galatians 3.26]- For ye are all the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus.*
- 5. Why is faith the instrument of adoption more than any other grace?
 - a. *[Habakkuk 2.4]- Behold, his soul which is lifted up is not upright in him: but the just shall live by his faith.*
- F. Use 1: See twofold.
 - 1. The amazing love of God.
 - a. *[1 John 3.1]- Behold, what manner of love the Father hath bestowed upon us, that we should be called the sons of God: therefore the world knoweth us not, because it knew him not.*
 - b. That God should adopt us when He had a Son of His own.
 - 1.) *[Colossians 1.13]- Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness, and hath translated us into the kingdom of his dear Son:*
 - 2.) *[Hebrews 1.4]- Being made so much better than the angels, as he hath by inheritance obtained a more excellent name than they.*
 - c. Consider what we were before God adopted us.
 - 1.) *[Ezekiel 16.6,8]- And when I passed by thee, and saw thee polluted in thine own blood, I said unto thee when thou wast in thy blood, Live; yea, I said unto thee when thou wast in thy blood, Live. Now when I passed by thee, and looked upon thee, behold, thy time was the time of love; and I spread my skirt over thee, and covered thy nakedness: yea, I swore unto thee, and entered into a covenant with thee, saith the Lord GOD, and thou becamest mine.*
 - d. That God should be at so great expense in adopting us.
 - e. That God should adopt His enemies.
 - f. That God should take great numbers out of the devil's family, and adopt them into the family of heaven.
 - 1.) *[Hebrews 2.10]- For it became him, for whom are all things, and by whom are all things, in bringing many sons unto glory, to make the captain of their salvation perfect through sufferings.*
 - g. That God should confer so great an honor upon us, in adopting us, the more He has magnified His love towards us.
 - 1.) *[1 Samuel 18.18]- And David said unto Saul, Who am I? and what is my life, or my father's family in Israel, that I should be son in law to the king?*
 - 2.) *[Matthew 22.30]- For in the resurrection they neither marry, nor are given in marriage, but are as the angels of God in heaven.*
 - 2. The sad conditions of such as live and die in unbelief.
 - a. *[Jeremiah 9.3]- And they bend their tongues like their bow for lies: but they are not valiant for the truth upon the earth; for they proceed from evil to evil, and they know not me, saith the LORD.*
 - b. *[Ephesians 2.1]- And you hath he quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins;*
- G. Use 2: Try whether you are adopted
 - 1. *[John 1.12]- But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name:*
 - 2. The first sign of adoption is obedience.
 - a. *[Jeremiah 35.5-6]- And I set before the sons of the house of the Rechabites pots full of wine, and cups, and I said unto them, Drink ye wine. But they said, We will drink no wine: for Jonadab the son of Rechab our father commanded us, saying, Ye shall drink no wine, neither ye, nor your sons for ever:*

- b. A child-like obedience must be regular, which implies five things.
 - 1.) It must be done by a right rule.
 - a.) *[Isaiah 8.20]- To the law and to the testimony: if they speak not according to this word, it is because there is no light in them.*
 - b.) *[Colossians 2.18]- Let no man beguile you of your reward in a voluntary humility and worshipping of angels, intruding into those things which he hath not seen, vainly puffed up by his fleshly mind,*
 - 2.) It must be done from a right principle, from the noble principle of faith.
 - a.) *[Romans 16.26]- But now is made manifest, and by the scriptures of the prophets, according to the commandment of the everlasting God, made known to all nations for the obedience of faith:*
 - b.) *“Quicquid decorum est ex fide proficiscitur – All acceptable works proceed from faith.” Augustine*
 - c.) *[Hebrews 11.4]- By faith Abel offered unto God a more excellent sacrifice than Cain, by which he obtained witness that he was righteous, God testifying of his gifts: and by it he being dead yet speaketh.*
 - 3.) It must be done to a right end the end of obedience is glorifying God.
 - a.) *“Finis specificat actionem – The end determines the value of the deed.”*
 - b.) *[Matthew 6.2]- Therefore when thou doest thine alms, do not sound a trumpet before thee, as the hypocrites do in the synagogues and in the streets, that they may have glory of men. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward.*
 - c.) *[1 Corinthians 13.3]- And though I bestow all my goods to feed the poor, and though I give my body to be burned, and have not charity, it profiteth me nothing.*
 - d.) *[Philippians 1.20]- According to my earnest expectation and my hope, that in nothing I shall be ashamed, but that with all boldness, as always, so now also Christ shall be magnified in my body, whether it be by life, or by death.*
 - e.) *“Though a child of God shoots short, yet he takes a right aim.”*
 - 4.) It must be done uniformly.
 - a.) *“Quicquid propter Deum fit aequaliter fit. – All things done for God are done with equal zeal.”*
 - b.) *[Psalm 119.6]- Then shall I not be ashamed, when I have respect unto all thy commandments.*
 - c.) But who can obey God in all things? Though an adopted heir of heaven cannot obey every precept perfectly, yet he does evangelically.
 - 1.) *[Romans 7.16]- If then I do that which I would not, I consent unto the law that it is good.*
 - 2.) *[Psalm 119.97]- O how love I thy law! it is my meditation all the day.*
 - 3.) *[Psalm 119.5]- O that my ways were directed to keep thy statutes!*
 - 5.) It must be done constantly.
 - a.) *[Psalm 106.3]- Blessed are they that keep judgment, and he that doeth righteousness at all times.*
 - b.) *[Leviticus 6.13]- The fire shall ever be burning upon the altar; it shall never go out.*
3. The second sign of adoption is to love to be in God’s presence. In prayer and in preaching.

- a. *[Psalm 63.1-2]- O God, thou art my God; early will I seek thee: my soul thirsteth for thee, my flesh longeth for thee in a dry and thirsty land, where no water is; To see thy power and thy glory, so as I have seen thee in the sanctuary.*
 - b. *[Genesis 4.16]- And Cain went out from the presence of the LORD, and dwelt in the land of Nod, on the east of Eden.*
4. The third sign of adoption is to have the guidance of God's Spirit.
 - a. *[Romans 8.14]- For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God.*
 - b. *[Hosea 11.3]- I taught Ephraim also to go, taking them by their arms; but they knew not that I healed them.*
 - c. But enthusiasts pretend to be led by the Spirit, when it is an ignas fatuus, a delusion. The Spirit's guidance is agreeable to the Word, enthusiasts leave the Word.
 - 1.) *[John 17.17]- Sanctify them through thy truth: thy word is truth.*
 - 2.) *[John 16.13]- Howbeit when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall not speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear, that shall he speak: and he will shew you things to come.*
 5. The forth sign is, that if we are adopted we have an entire love to all God's children.
 - a. *[1 Peter 2.17]- Honour all men. Love the brotherhood. Fear God. Honour the king.*
 - b. *[Deuteronomy 32.5]- They have corrupted themselves, their spot is not the spot of his children: they are a perverse and crooked generation.*
- H. Use 3: Rejoice in the benefits of adoption.
1. What are the benefits, which accrue to God's children?
 - a. Great privileges.
 - 1.) *[Matthew 17.25]- He saith, Yes. And when he was come into the house, Jesus prevented him, saying, What thinkest thou, Simon? of whom do the kings of the earth take custom or tribute? of their own children, or of strangers?*
 - 2.) *[Luke 10.19]- Behold, I give unto you power to tread on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy: and nothing shall by any means hurt you.*
 - 3.) *[Psalm 91.10]- There shall no evil befall thee, neither shall any plague come nigh thy dwelling.*
 - 4.) *[Revelation 16.9]- And men were scorched with great heat, and blasphemed the name of God, which hath power over these plagues: and they repented not to give him glory.*
 - 5.) *[Hebrews 12.10]- For they verily for a few days chastened us after their own pleasure; but he for our profit, that we might be partakers of his holiness.*
 - 6.) *[Romans 8.33]- Who shall lay any thing to the charge of God's elect? It is God that justifieth.*
 - b. Interest in all of the promises.
 - 1.) *[Hebrews 6.17]- Wherein God, willing more abundantly to shew unto the heirs of promise the immutability of his counsel, confirmed it by an oath:*
 - 2.) *[Romans 16.20]- And the God of peace shall bruise Satan under your feet shortly. The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you. Amen.*
 - 3.) *[Romans 6.14]- For sin shall not have dominion over you: for ye are not under the law, but under grace.*
- I. Use 4: Extol and magnify God's mercy, Who has adopted you into His family.

XXXV. Sanctification.

- A. Proof text
1. *[1 Thessalonians 4.3]- For this is the will of God, even your sanctification, that ye should abstain from fornication:*
- B. Sanctification in parts.
1. The privative part, which lies in the purging of sin.
 - a. *[1 Corinthians 5.7]- Purge out therefore the old leaven, that ye may be a new lump, as ye are unleavened. For even Christ our passover is sacrificed for us:*
 2. The positive part, which is the spiritual refining of the soul.
 - a. *[Romans 12.2]- And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God.*
 - b. *[2 Peter 1.4]- Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises: that by these ye might be partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust.*
 - c. *[Exodus 28.2]- And thou shalt make holy garments for Aaron thy brother for glory and for beauty.*
- C. Sanctification defined
1. *"It is the principle of grace savingly wrought, whereby the heart becomes holy, and is made after god's own heart. A sanctified person bears not only God's name, but His image."*
- D. Sanctification in seven positions
1. Sanctification is a supernatural thing; it is divinely infused.
 - a. *[Leviticus 21.8]- Thou shalt sanctify him therefore; for he offereth the bread of thy God: he shall be holy unto thee: for I the LORD, which sanctify you, am holy.*
 - b. *[1 Peter 1.2]- Elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, through sanctification of the Spirit, unto obedience and sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ: Grace unto you, and peace, be multiplied.*
 2. Sanctification is an intrinsic thing; it lies chiefly in the heart.
 - a. *[1 Peter 3.4]- But let it be the hidden man of the heart, in that which is not corruptible, even the ornament of a meek and quiet spirit, which is in the sight of God of great price.*
 - b. *[Psalm 51.6]- Behold, thou desirest truth in the inward parts: and in the hidden part thou shalt make me to know wisdom.*
 3. Sanctification is an extensive thing; it spreads into the whole man.
 - a. *[1 Thessalonians 5.23]- And the very God of peace sanctify you wholly; and I pray God your whole spirit and soul and body be preserved blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.*
 - b. *[Ephesians 5.8]- For ye were sometimes darkness, but now are ye light in the Lord: walk as children of light:*
 - c. *[Colossians 3.10]- And have put on the new man, which is renewed in knowledge after the image of him that created him:*
 4. Sanctification is an intense and ardent thing.
 - a. *"Qualitates sunt in subjecto intensive – its properties burn within the believer."*
 - b. *[Romans 12.11]- Not slothful in business; fervent in spirit; serving the Lord;*
 5. Sanctification is a beautiful thing. It makes God and angels fall in love with us.
 - a. *[Psalm 110.3]- Thy people shall be willing in the day of thy power, in the beauties of holiness from the womb of the morning: thou hast the dew of thy youth.*

- b. *[Exodus 15.11]- Who is like unto thee, O LORD, among the gods? who is like thee, glorious in holiness, fearful in praises, doing wonders?*
 - 6. Sanctification is an abiding thing.
 - a. *[1 John 3.9]- Whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin; for his seed remaineth in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God.*
 - b. *[Revelation 2.4]- Nevertheless I have somewhat against thee, because thou hast left thy first love.*
 - c. *[1 John 2.27]- But the anointing which ye have received of him abideth in you, and ye need not that any man teach you: but as the same anointing teacheth you of all things, and is truth, and is no lie, and even as it hath taught you, ye shall abide in him.*
 - 7. Sanctification is a progressive thing.
 - a. *[2 Corinthians 7.1]- Having therefore these promises, dearly beloved, let us cleanse ourselves from all filthiness of the flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God.*
 - b. *[Colossians 1.10]- That ye might walk worthy of the Lord unto all pleasing, being fruitful in every good work, and increasing in the knowledge of God;*
 - c. *[2 Corinthians 10.15]- Not boasting of things without our measure, that is, of other men's labours; but having hope, when your faith is increased, that we shall be enlarged by you according to our rule abundantly,*
- E. Sanctification's counterfeits
- 1. Moral virtue.
 - a. *"A person adorned and cultivated with moral virtue, has a secret spleen against sanctity."*
 - b. *[Acts 17.18]- Then certain philosophers of the Epicureans, and of the Stoicks, encountered him. And some said, What will this babbler say? other some, He seemeth to be a setter forth of strange gods: because he preached unto them Jesus, and the resurrection.*
 - 2. Superstitious devotion.
 - a. *"A superstitious holiness cost no great labour, there is nothing of the heart in it."*
 - 3. Hypocrisy.
 - a. *[2 Timothy 3.5]- Having a form of godliness, but denying the power thereof: from such turn away.*
 - b. *[Ephesians 4.24]- And that ye put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness.*
 - c. *[Revelation 3.1]- And unto the angel of the church in Sardis write; These things saith he that hath the seven Spirits of God, and the seven stars; I know thy works, that thou hast a name that thou livest, and art dead.*
 - d. *[Jude 12]- These are spots in your feasts of charity, when they feast with you, feeding themselves without fear: clouds they are without water, carried about of winds; trees whose fruit withereth, without fruit, twice dead, plucked up by the roots;*
 - 4. Restraining grace.
 - a. *"So men have a mind to lust, but conscience stands as the angel, with a flaming sword, and affrights."*
 - 5. Common grace.
 - a. *"There is some light in the judgment, but it is not humbling; some checks in the conscience, but they are not awakening."*
 - b. *"After conviction, men go into the house of mirth, take the harp to drive away the spirit of sadness, and so all dies and comes to nothing."*

F. The Necessity of Sanctification

1. God has called us to it.
 - a. *[2 Peter 1.3]- According as his divine power hath given unto us all things that pertain unto life and godliness, through the knowledge of him that hath called us to glory and virtue:*
 - b. *[1 Thessalonians 4.7]- For God hath not called us unto uncleanness, but unto holiness.*
2. Without sanctification, there is no evidence of justification.
 - a. *[1 Corinthians 6.11]- And such were some of you: but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God.*
 - b. *[Micah 7.18-19]- Who is a God like unto thee, that pardoneth iniquity, and passeth by the transgression of the remnant of his heritage? he retaineth not his anger for ever, because he delighteth in mercy. He will turn again, he will have compassion upon us; he will subdue our iniquities; and thou wilt cast all their sins into the depths of the sea.*
 - c. *[John 19.34]- But one of the soldiers with a spear pierced his side, and forthwith came there out blood and water.*
3. Without sanctification we have no title to the new covenant.
 - a. *[Ezekiel 36.26]- A new heart also will I give you, and a new spirit will I put within you: and I will take away the stony heart out of your flesh, and I will give you an heart of flesh.*
4. There is no going to heaven without sanctification.
 - a. *[Hebrews 12.14]- Follow peace with all men, and holiness, without which no man shall see the Lord:*
5. Without sanctification all our holy things are defiled.
 - a. *[Titus 1.15]- Unto the pure all things are pure: but unto them that are defiled and unbelieving is nothing pure; but even their mind and conscience is defiled.*
 - b. *[Haggai 2.12-13]- If one bear holy flesh in the skirt of his garment, and with his skirt do touch bread, or pottage, or wine, or oil, or any meat, shall it be holy? And the priests answered and said, No. Then said Haggai, If one that is unclean by a dead body touch any of these, shall it be unclean? And the priests answered and said, It shall be unclean.*
6. Without sanctification we can show no sign of our election.
 - a. *[2 Thessalonians 2.13]- But we are bound to give thanks alway to God for you, brethren beloved of the Lord, because God hath from the beginning chosen you to salvation through sanctification of the Spirit and belief of the truth:*
 - b. *"Sanctification is the ear-mark of Christ's sheep."*

G. The Signs of Sanctification

1. Remembering a time when they were unsanctified.
 - a. *[Titus 3.3]- For we ourselves also were sometimes foolish, disobedient, deceived, serving divers lusts and pleasures, living in malice and envy, hateful, and hating one another.*
 - b. *[Ezekiel 16.9]- Then washed I thee with water; yea, I thoroughly washed away thy blood from thee, and I anointed thee with oil.*
2. The indwelling of the Spirit.
 - a. *[2 Timothy 1.14]- That good thing which was committed unto thee keep by the Holy Ghost which dwelleth in us.*
 - b. *[Acts 5.3]- But Peter said, Ananias, why hath Satan filled thine heart to lie to the Holy Ghost, and to keep back part of the price of the land?*

3. An antipathy against sin.
 - a. *[Psalm 119.104]- Through thy precepts I get understanding: therefore I hate every false way.*
 4. The spiritual performances of duties, with the heart, and from the principle of love.
 - a. *[Isaiah 58.13]- If thou turn away thy foot from the sabbath, from doing thy pleasure on my holy day; and call the sabbath a delight, the holy of the LORD, honourable; and shalt honour him, not doing thine own ways, nor finding thine own pleasure, nor speaking thine own words:*
 - b. *[1 Peter 2.5]- Ye also, as lively stones, are built up a spiritual house, an holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifices, acceptable to God by Jesus Christ.*
 5. A well ordered life.
 - a. *[1 Peter 1.15]- But as he which hath called you is holy, so be ye holy in all manner of conversation;*
 - b. *[Proverbs 30.12]- There is a generation that are pure in their own eyes, and yet is not washed from their filthiness.*
 - c. *[Psalm 45.13]- The king's daughter is all glorious within: her clothing is of wrought gold.*
 6. Steadfast resolution.
 - a. *[2 Samuel 6.22]- And I will yet be more vile than thus, and will be base in mine own sight: and of the maidservants which thou hast spoken of, of them shall I be had in honour.*
 - b. *[Acts 20.24]- But none of these things move me, neither count I my life dear unto myself, so that I might finish my course with joy, and the ministry, which I have received of the Lord Jesus, to testify the gospel of the grace of God.*
 - c. *[Job 27.6]- My righteousness I hold fast, and will not let it go: my heart shall not reproach me so long as I live.*
- H. Use 1: The main thing a Christian should look after is Sanctification
1. *[Song of Solomon 1.10]- Thy cheeks are comely with rows of jewels, thy neck with chains of gold.*
 2. *[Ephesians 2.1]- And you hath he quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins;*
 3. *[1 John 5.19]- And we know that we are of God, and the whole world lieth in wickedness.*
 4. *[Genesis 21.9]- And Sarah saw the son of Hagar the Egyptian, which she had born unto Abraham, mocking.*
- I. Use 2: Above all things pursue after Sanctification. Seek grace more than gold
1. *[Proverbs 4.13]- Take fast hold of instruction; let her not go: keep her; for she is thy life.*
 2. What are the chief inducements to sanctification?
 - a. It is the will of God that we should be holy.
 - 1.) *[1 Thessalonians 4.3]- For this is the will of God, even your sanctification, that ye should abstain from fornication:*
 - b. Jesus Christ died for our sanctification.
 - 1.) *[Titus 2.14]- Who gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify unto himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works.*
 - c. Sanctification makes us resemble God.
 - d. Sanctification is that which God bears a great love to.

- 1.) *[Matthew 15.28]- Then Jesus answered and said unto her, O woman, great is thy faith: be it unto thee even as thou wilt. And her daughter was made whole from that very hour.*
- 2.) *"The Lord has two heavens to dwell in, and the holy heart is one of them."*
- e. Sanctification is the only thing that makes us differ from the wicked.
 - 1.) *[2 Timothy 2.19]- Nevertheless the foundation of God standeth sure, having this seal, The Lord knoweth them that are his. And, let every one that nameth the name of Christ depart from iniquity.*
 - 2.) *[1 John 2.20]- But ye have an unction from the Holy One, and ye know all things.*
- f. It is as great shame to have the name of a Christian, yet want sanctity.
 - 1.) *[2 Peter 2.14]- Having eyes full of adultery, and that cannot cease from sin; beguiling unstable souls: an heart they have exercised with covetous practices; cursed children:*
- g. Sanctification fits for heaven.
 - 1.) *[2 Peter 1.3]- According as his divine power hath given unto us all things that pertain unto life and godliness, through the knowledge of him that hath called us to glory and virtue:*
 - 2.) *[1 Kings 1.39]- And Zadok the priest took an horn of oil out of the tabernacle, and anointed Solomon. And they blew the trumpet; and all the people said, God save king Solomon.*
 - 3.) *[Matthew 5.8]- Blessed are the pure in heart: for they shall see God.*
3. How may sanctification be attained?
 - a. Be conversant in the word of God.
 - 1.) *[John 17.17]- Sanctify them through thy truth: thy word is truth.*
 - b. Get faith in Christ's blood.
 - 1.) *[Acts 15.9]- And put no difference between us and them, purifying their hearts by faith.*
 - c. Breathe after the Spirit.
 - 1.) *[2 Thessalonians 2.13]- But we are bound to give thanks alway to God for you, brethren beloved of the Lord, because God hath from the beginning chosen you to salvation through sanctification of the Spirit and belief of the truth:*
 - d. Associate with sanctified persons.
 - 1.) *[Proverbs 13.20]- He that walketh with wise men shall be wise: but a companion of fools shall be destroyed.*
 - e. Pray for sanctification.
 - 1.) *[Job 14.4]- Who can bring a clean thing out of an unclean? not one.*
 - 2.) *[Psalm 51.10]- Create in me a clean heart, O God; and renew a right spirit within me.*
- J. Use 3: Has God brought a clean thing out of an unclean thing? Then wear this jewel of sanctification with thankfulness
 1. *[Colossians 1.12]- Giving thanks unto the Father, which hath made us meet to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light:*
 2. *[Luke 18.43]- And immediately he received his sight, and followed him, glorifying God: and all the people, when they saw it, gave praise unto God.*

XXXVI. Assurance

- A. The first benefit flowing from Sanctification.
 - 1. *[2 Peter 1.10]- Wherefore the rather, brethren, give diligence to make your calling and election sure: for if ye do these things, ye shall never fall:*
 - 2. *[1 John 2.3]- And hereby we do know that we know him, if we keep his commandments.*
 - 3. *[2 Timothy 1.12]- For the which cause I also suffer these things: nevertheless I am not ashamed: for I know whom I have believed, and am persuaded that he is able to keep that which I have committed unto him against that day.*
 - 4. *[Galatians 2.20]- I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me.*
- B. Have all sanctified persons Assurance?
 - 1. They have a right to it
 - 2. God may give or suspend assurance *pro licito*, as He pleases
- C. What is Assurance?
 - 1. It consists of a practical syllogism, in which the Word of God makes the major, conscience the minor, and the Spirit of God, the conclusion.
 - 2. *[Romans 8.16]- The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God:*
- D. Has a sanctified soul such an Assurance as excludes all doubting?
 - 1. His assurance though infallible, is not perfect.
 - 2. *[Psalm 26.3]- For thy lovingkindness is before mine eyes: and I have walked in thy truth.*
 - 3. *[Psalm 89.49]- Lord, where are thy former lovingkindnesses, which thou swarest unto David in thy truth?*
- E. What are the differences between true Assurance and Presumption?
 - 1. The method and manner of working.
 - a. Divine assurance flows from humiliation for sin.
 - 2. Taking heed of that which will weaken and darken his assurance.
 - a. *[Jeremiah 3.4-5]- Wilt thou not from this time cry unto me, My father, thou art the guide of my youth? Will he reserve his anger for ever? will he keep it to the end? Behold, thou hast spoken and done evil things as thou couldst.*
 - 3. True assurance is built upon a Scripture basis.
 - a. *[Isaiah 32.17]- And the work of righteousness shall be peace; and the effect of righteousness quietness and assurance for ever.*
 - 4. Always keeps the heart in a lowly posture.
 - a. *[Ephesians 3.8]- Unto me, who am less than the least of all saints, is this grace given, that I should preach among the Gentiles the unsearchable riches of Christ;*
 - b. *[Luke 18.11,13]- The Pharisee stood and prayed thus with himself, God, I thank thee, that I am not as other men are, extortioners, unjust, adulterers, or even as this publican. And the publican, standing afar off, would not lift up so much as his eyes unto heaven, but smote upon his breast, saying, God be merciful to me a sinner.*
 - c. *"Feathers fly up, but gold descends; so the heart of him who has this golden assurance descends in humility."*
- F. What may excite us to look after Assurance?
 - 1. To consider how sweet it is.
 - 2. To consider the noble and excellent effects it produces.

- a. Assurance will make us love God, and praise Him.
 - 1.) *[Philippians 3.8]- Yea doubtless, and I count all things but loss for the excellency of the knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord: for whom I have suffered the loss of all things, and do count them but dung, that I may win Christ,*
 - 2.) *[Isaiah 38.19]- The living, the living, he shall praise thee, as I do this day: the father to the children shall make known thy truth.*
 - b. Assurance will drop sweetness into all our creature enjoyments
 - c. Assurance will make us active and lively in God's service; it will excite prayer, and quicken obedience.
 - 1.) *[Nehemiah 8.10]- Then he said unto them, Go your way, eat the fat, and drink the sweet, and send portions unto them for whom nothing is prepared: for this day is holy unto our LORD: neither be ye sorry; for the joy of the LORD is your strength.*
 - d. Assurance will be a golden shield to beat back temptation.
 - 1.) He tempts to draw us to sin.
 - 2.) He would make us question our interest in God, by telling us we are hypocrites, and God does not love us.
 - 3.) *"If faith resists the devil, assurance will put him to flight."*
 - e. Assurance will make us contented though we have but little in the world.
 - 1.) *[Psalm 16.5-6]- The LORD is the portion of mine inheritance and of my cup: thou maintainest my lot. The lines are fallen unto me in pleasant places; yea, I have a goodly heritage.*
 - 2.) *[2 Timothy 1.12]- For the which cause I also suffer these things: nevertheless I am not ashamed: for I know whom I have believed, and am persuaded that he is able to keep that which I have committed unto him against that day.*
 - 3.) *[2 Corinthians 6.10]- As sorrowful, yet alway rejoicing; as poor, yet making many rich; as having nothing, and yet possessing all things.*
 - f. Assurance will bear up in suffering.
 - 1.) *[Hebrews 10.36]- For ye have need of patience, that, after ye have done the will of God, ye might receive the promise.*
 - 2.) *[Romans 5.3,5]- And not only so, but we glory in tribulations also: knowing that tribulation worketh patience; And hope maketh not ashamed; because the love of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Ghost which is given unto us.*
 - 3.) *[Hebrews 10.34]- For ye had compassion of me in my bonds, and took joyfully the spoiling of your goods, knowing in yourselves that ye have in heaven a better and an enduring substance.*
 - g. Assurance will strengthen us against the fears of death.
- G. What shall they do who have not Assurance?
- 1. Let such labor to find grace.
 - a. How shall we know we have a real work of grace, and have a right to assurance?
 - 1.) Have we high appreciations of Jesus Christ?
 - a.) *[1 Peter 2.7]- Unto you therefore which believe he is precious: but unto them which be disobedient, the stone which the builders disallowed, the same is made the head of the corner,*
 - b.) *[Philippians 3.8]- Yea doubtless, and I count all things but loss for the excellency of the knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord: for whom I have suffered the loss of all things, and do count them but dung, that I may win Christ,*
 - c.) *[Hebrews 11.26]- Esteeming the reproach of Christ greater riches than the treasures in Egypt: for he had respect unto the recompense of the reward.*

- 2.) Have we the indwelling of the Spirit?
 - a.) *[2 Timothy 1.14]- That good thing which was committed unto thee keep by the Holy Ghost which dwelleth in us.*
- b. How may we know that we have the indwelling presence of the Spirit?
 - 1.) If we *superna anhelare*, pant after heavenly things.
 - 2.) If we thirst after Christ and glory.
2. If we want assurance, wait for it.
 - a. *[Isaiah 28.16]- Therefore thus saith the Lord GOD, Behold, I lay in Zion for a foundation a stone, a tried stone, a precious corner stone, a sure foundation: he that believeth shall not make haste.*
 - b. *[Isaiah 8.17]- And I will wait upon the LORD, that hideth his face from the house of Jacob, and I will look for him.*
 - c. Has God waited for your conversion and will you not wait for His consolation?
 - 1.) *[Jeremiah 13.27]- I have seen thine adulteries, and thy neighings, the lewdness of thy whoredom, and thine abominations on the hills in the fields. Woe unto thee, O Jerusalem! wilt thou not be made clean? when shall it once be?*
 - d. Assurance is so sweet and precious, that it is worth waiting for.
 - 1.) *[Judges 18.24]- And he said, Ye have taken away my gods which I made, and the priest, and ye are gone away: and what have I more? and what is this that ye say unto me, What aileth thee?*
 - 2.) *"Assurance is the first fruits of paradise."*
 - 3.) *"One smile of God's face, one glance of His eye, one crumb of the hidden manna is so sweet and delicious, that it deserves our waiting."*
 - e. God has given a promise that we should not wait in vain.
 - 1.) *[Isaiah 49.23]- And kings shall be thy nursing fathers, and their queens thy nursing mothers: they shall bow down to thee with their face toward the earth, and lick up the dust of thy feet; and thou shalt know that I am the LORD: for they shall not be ashamed that wait for me.*
 - 2.) *"Assurance shall be reserved as an ingredient to sweeten the bitter cup of death."*
- H. How may deserted souls be comforted who are cast down for want of Assurance?
 1. Want of assurance shall not hinder the success of the saint's prayers.
 - a. *[Psalm 31.22]- For I said in my haste, I am cut off from before thine eyes: nevertheless thou heardest the voice of my supplications when I cried unto thee.*
 2. Faith may be strongest when assurance is weakest.
 - a. *[Matthew 15.28]- Then Jesus answered and said unto her, O woman, great is thy faith: be it unto thee even as thou wilt. And her daughter was made whole from that very hour.*
 - b. *[John 20.29]- Jesus saith unto him, Thomas, because thou hast seen me, thou hast believed: blessed are they that have not seen, and yet have believed.*
 3. When God is out of sight, He is not out of His covenant.
 - a. *[Psalm 89.28]- My mercy will I keep for him for evermore, and my covenant shall stand fast with him.*
 - b. *[Isaiah 54.10]- For the mountains shall depart, and the hills be removed; but my kindness shall not depart from thee, neither shall the covenant of my peace be removed, saith the LORD that hath mercy on thee.*

- c. *[Isaiah 54.17]- No weapon that is formed against thee shall prosper; and every tongue that shall rise against thee in judgment thou shalt condemn. This is the heritage of the servants of the LORD, and their righteousness is of me, saith the LORD.*
- I. What shall we do to get assurance?
1. Keep a pure conscience.
 - a. *[Hebrews 10.22]- Let us draw near with a true heart in full assurance of faith, having our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience, and our bodies washed with pure water.*
 2. Be much in the exercise of grace.
 - a. *[1 Timothy 4.7]- But refuse profane and old wives' fables, and exercise thyself rather unto godliness.*
 - b. *[2 Peter 1.5]- And beside this, giving all diligence, add to your faith virtue; and to virtue knowledge;*
 3. Cherish the Holy Spirit of God.
 - a. *[Psalm 51.11]- Cast me not away from thy presence; and take not thy holy spirit from me.*
 - b. *[2 Corinthians 1.22]- Who hath also sealed us, and given the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts.*
 4. Let us lie in the pool of ordinances, and frequent the Word and sacrament.
 - a. *[Song of Solomon 2.4]- He brought me to the banqueting house, and his banner over me was love.*
- J. How should they conduct themselves who have assurance?
1. Do not abuse it.
 - a. Do not grow more remiss in duty
 - b. *[1 Kings 11.9]- And the LORD was angry with Solomon, because his heart was turned from the LORD God of Israel, which had appeared unto him twice,*
 2. Admire His stupendous mercy.
 3. Let your hearts be endeared in love to God.
 - a. *[Psalm 31.23]- O love the LORD, all ye his saints: for the LORD preserveth the faithful, and plentifully rewardeth the proud doer.*
 4. If you have assurance, improve it for God's glory.
 - a. By encouraging such as are yet unconverted.
 - b. Improve assurance, by comforting such as want it
 - 1.) *[2 Corinthians 1.6]- And whether we be afflicted, it is for your consolation and salvation, which is effectual in the enduring of the same sufferings which we also suffer: or whether we be comforted, it is for your consolation and salvation.*
 - c. By walking more heavenly.
 - 1.) *"You have angel's food; and it becomes not you, with the serpent, to lick the dust."*
 - d. Improve assurance by a cheerful walking.
 - 1.) *[2 Samuel 13.4]- And he said unto him, Why art thou, being the king's son, lean from day to day?*
 5. If you have assurance, let it make you long after a glorified state.
 - a. *[Revelation 19.9]- And he saith unto me, Write, Blessed are they which are called unto the marriage supper of the Lamb. And he saith unto me, These are the true sayings of God.*

6. If you have assurance, be careful not to lose it.
 - a. By prayer
 - 1.) *[Psalm 36.10]- O continue thy lovingkindness unto them that know thee; and thy righteousness to the upright in heart.*
 - b. By humility
 - 1.) *[1 Timothy 1.15]- This is a faithful saying, and worthy of all acceptation, that Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners; of whom I am chief.*
 - 2.) *"The jewel of assurance is best kept in the cabinet of a humble heart."*

XXXVII. Peace

A. Proof text

1. *[1 Peter 1.2]- Elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, through sanctification of the Spirit, unto obedience and sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ: Grace unto you, and peace, be multiplied.*

B. Several species or kinds of Peace

1. *[Isaiah 66.12]- For thus saith the LORD, Behold, I will extend peace to her like a river, and the glory of the Gentiles like a flowing stream: then shall ye suck, ye shall be borne upon her sides, and be dandled upon her knees.*
2. External peace.
 - a. Economical, or peace in a family.
 - b. Political, or peace in the state.
 - 1.) *[Psalm 147.14]- He maketh peace in thy borders, and filleth thee with the finest of the wheat.*
 - c. Ecclesiastical, or peace in the church.
3. Spiritual peace.
 - a. Peace with God.
 - b. Peace within our own conscience.

C. Whence comes spiritual Peace? It has the whole Trinity as its author.

1. God the Father is the God of Peace.
 - a. *[1 Thessalonians 5.23]- And the very God of peace sanctify you wholly; and I pray God your whole spirit and soul and body be preserved blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.*
 - b. *[1 Corinthians 14.33]- For God is not the author of confusion, but of peace, as in all churches of the saints.*
 - c. *[Philippians 4.9]- Those things, which ye have both learned, and received, and heard, and seen in me, do: and the God of peace shall be with you.*
 - d. *[Numbers 6.26]- The LORD lift up his countenance upon thee, and give thee peace.*
2. God the Son is the Purchaser of peace.
 - a. *[Isaiah 9.6]- For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given: and the government shall be upon his shoulder: and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace.*
 - b. *[Colossians 1.20]- And, having made peace through the blood of his cross, by him to reconcile all things unto himself; by him, I say, whether they be things in earth, or things in heaven.*
3. Peace is the fruit of the Spirit.

- a. *[Galatians 5.22]- But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith,*
- D. Whether such as are destitute of grace have Peace?
1. No. Peace flows from sanctification, but they being unregenerate, have nothing to do with peace.
 2. *[Isaiah 57.21]- There is no peace, saith my God, to the wicked.*
 3. *[Luke 11.21]- When a strong man armed keepeth his palace, his goods are in peace:*
- E. Signs of false Peace
1. False peace has much confidence in it, but this confidence is conceit.
 - a. *[Matthew 25.11-12]- Afterward came also the other virgins, saying, Lord, Lord, open to us. But he answered and said, Verily I say unto you, I know you not.*
 2. False peace separates those things, which God has joined together.
 - a. *[Deuteronomy 29.19]- And it come to pass, when he heareth the words of this curse, that he bless himself in his heart, saying, I shall have peace, though I walk in the imagination of mine heart, to add drunkenness to thirst:*
 3. False peace is not willing to be tried.
 - a. *[Matthew 13.4-7]- And when he sowed, some seeds fell by the way side, and the fowls came and devoured them up: Some fell upon stony places, where they had not much earth: and forthwith they sprung up, because they had no deepness of earth: And when the sun was up, they were scorched; and because they had no root, they withered away. And some fell among thorns; and the thorns sprung up, and choked them:*
 - b. *[Matthew 13.19-22]- When any one heareth the word of the kingdom, and understandeth it not, then cometh the wicked one, and catcheth away that which was sown in his heart. This is he which received seed by the way side. But he that received the seed into stony places, the same is he that heareth the word, and anon with joy receiveth it; Yet hath he not root in himself, but dureth for a while: for when tribulation or persecution ariseth because of the word, by and by he is offended. He also that received seed among the thorns is he that heareth the word; and the care of this world, and the deceitfulness of riches, choke the word, and he becometh unfruitful.*
- F. How shall we know that ours is a true peace?
1. True peace flows from union with Christ.
 - a. *[John 16.33]- These things I have spoken unto you, that in me ye might have peace. In the world ye shall have tribulation: but be of good cheer; I have overcome the world.*
 2. True peace flows from subjection to Christ.
 - a. *[Isaiah 9.7]- Of the increase of his government and peace there shall be no end, upon the throne of David, and upon his kingdom, to order it, and to establish it with judgment and with justice from henceforth even for ever. The zeal of the LORD of hosts will perform this.*
 - b. *[Zechariah 6.13]- Even he shall build the temple of the LORD; and he shall bear the glory, and shall sit and rule upon his throne; and he shall be a priest upon his throne: and the counsel of peace shall be between them both.*
 - c. *[Isaiah 9.6]- For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given: and the government shall be upon his shoulder: and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace.*
 3. True peace is after trouble.
 - a. *[1 Kings 19.12]- And after the earthquake a fire; but the LORD was not in the fire: and after the fire a still small voice.*

- G. Have all sanctified persons this peace?
1. *"They have title to it; they have ground to it; grace is the seed of peace, and it will in time turn to peace; as blossoms of a tree to fruit, milk to cream."*
 2. **[Psalm 29.11]- The LORD will give strength unto his people; the LORD will bless his people with peace.**
- H. But why have not all believers the full enjoyment and possession of peace? Why is not this flower of peace fully ripe and blown?
1. Through the fury of temptation, though the devil cannot destroy us, he will disturb us.
 2. Through mistake and misapprehension about sin.
 - a. **[Galatians 5.17]- For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh: and these are contrary the one to the other: so that ye cannot do the things that ye would.**
 3. The godly may not enjoy peace, through remissness of duty; they may leave their first love.
 - a. **[Revelation 2.2-5]- I know thy works, and thy labour, and thy patience, and how thou canst not bear them which are evil: and thou hast tried them which say they are apostles, and are not, and hast found them liars: And hast borne, and hast patience, and for my name's sake hast laboured, and hast not fainted. Nevertheless I have somewhat against thee, because thou hast left thy first love. Remember therefore from whence thou art fallen, and repent, and do the first works; or else I will come unto thee quickly, and will remove thy candlestick out of his place, except thou repent.**
- I. Use 1: Labor for this blessed peace-peace with God and conscience.
1. **[Philippians 4.7]- And the peace of God, which passeth all understanding, shall keep your hearts and minds through Christ Jesus.**
 2. **[1 Samuel 1.7]- And as he did so year by year, when she went up to the house of the LORD, so she provoked her; therefore she wept, and did not eat.**
 3. Noble and excellent effects of this blessed peace.
 - a. Boldness before the throne of grace.
 - 1.) **[Psalm 25.1]- Unto thee, O LORD, do I lift up my soul.**
 - 2.) **[Psalm 38.6]- I am troubled; I am bowed down greatly; I go mourning all the day long.**
 - 3.) **[Psalm 26.3]- For thy lovingkindness is before mine eyes: and I have walked in thy truth.**
 - b. The divine peace fires the heart with love to Christ.
 - c. This peace quiets the heart in trouble.
 - 1.) **[Micah 5.5]- And this man shall be the peace, when the Assyrian shall come into our land: and when he shall tread in our palaces, then shall we raise against him seven shepherds, and eight principal men.**
 - 2.) **[Psalm 4.8]- I will both lay me down in peace, and sleep: for thou, LORD, only makest me dwell in safety.**
 - 3.) **[2 Samuel 15.30]- And David went up by the ascent of mount Olivet, and wept as he went up, and had his head covered, and he went barefoot: and all the people that was with him covered every man his head, and they went up, weeping as they went up.**
 4. What shall we do to attain this blessed peace?
 - a. Let us ask it of God. He is the God of peace.
 - b. If you would have peace, make war with sin.
 - 1.) **[2 Kings 9.22]- And it came to pass, when Joram saw Jehu, that he said, Is it peace, Jehu? And he answered, What peace, so long as the whoredoms of thy mother Jezebel and her witchcrafts are so many?**

- 2.) *[Romans 6.14]- For sin shall not have dominion over you: for ye are not under the law, but under grace.*
- c. Go to Christ's blood for peace.
 - 1.) *[Hebrews 12.24]- And to Jesus the mediator of the new covenant, and to the blood of sprinkling, that speaketh better things than that of Abel.*
 - 2.) *[Romans 5.1]- Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ:*
- d. Walk closely with God.
 - 1.) *[Galatians 6.16]- And as many as walk according to this rule, peace be on them, and mercy, and upon the Israel of God.*
- J. Use 2: You who have this peace, peace above, peace within, labor to keep it: it is a precious jewel, do not lose it.
 1. Take heed of relapses.
 - a. *[Psalm 85.8]- I will hear what God the LORD will speak: for he will speak peace unto his people, and to his saints: but let them not turn again to folly.*
 2. Make up your spiritual accounts daily.
 - a. *[Psalm 77.6]- I call to remembrance my song in the night: I commune with mine own heart: and my spirit made diligent search.*

XXXVIII. Joy

- A. Proof text
 1. *[Galatians 5.22]- But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith,*
- B. Spiritual Joy
 1. It is a delightful passion.
 2. It arises from the feeling of some good.
 3. By it the soul is supported under present troubles.
 4. The heart is fenced against future fear.
 - a. *[Psalm 23.4]- Yea, though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death, I will fear no evil: for thou art with me; thy rod and thy staff they comfort me.*
- C. How is this Joy wrought?
 1. It arises from the promise.
 2. The Spirit of God who is called the "Comforter"
 - a. *[John 14.26]- But the Comforter, which is the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you.*
 - b. *[Romans 5.5]- And hope maketh not ashamed; because the love of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Ghost which is given unto us.*
- D. What are the seasons in which God usually gives His people divine Joy?
 1. Sometimes at the blessed Supper.
 2. Before God calls His people to suffer.
 - a. *[Acts 23.11]- And the night following the Lord stood by him, and said, Be of good cheer, Paul: for as thou hast testified of me in Jerusalem, so must thou bear witness also at Rome.*
 - b. *[2 Corinthians 1.5]- For as the sufferings of Christ abound in us, so our consolation also aboundeth by Christ.*

3. After sore conflicts with Satan.
 - a. *[Matthew 4.11]- Then the devil leaveth him, and, behold, angels came and ministered unto him.*
 4. After desertion.
 - a. *[Job 6.4]- For the arrows of the Almighty are within me, the poison whereof drinketh up my spirit: the terrors of God do set themselves in array against me.*
 - b. *[Psalm 77.8]- Is his mercy clean gone for ever? doth his promise fail for evermore?*
 5. At the hour of death.
 - a. *[Acts 7.59-60]- And they stoned Stephen, calling upon God, and saying, Lord Jesus, receive my spirit. And he kneeled down, and cried with a loud voice, Lord, lay not this sin to their charge. And when he had said this, he fell asleep.*
- E. What are the differences between worldly joys and spiritual?
1. Spiritual joys help to make us better, worldly joys often make us worse.
 - a. *[Jeremiah 22.21]- I spake unto thee in thy prosperity; but thou saidst, I will not hear. This hath been thy manner from thy youth, that thou obeyedst not my voice.*
 - b. *"Pride and luxury are the two worms bred of worldly pleasures."*
 - c. *[Hosea 4.11]- Whoredom and wine and new wine take away the heart.*
 - d. *[Nehemiah 8.10]- Then he said unto them, Go your way, eat the fat, and drink the sweet, and send portions unto them for whom nothing is prepared: for this day is holy unto our LORD: neither be ye sorry; for the joy of the LORD is your strength.*
 2. Spiritual joys are inward; they are heart joys.
 - a. *[John 16.22]- And ye now therefore have sorrow: but I will see you again, and your heart shall rejoice, and your joy no man taketh from you.*
 - b. *"True joy latet 'in profundo', it is hidden within, worldly joy is in 'superficie', it lies on the outside, like the dew wets the leaf."*
 - c. *[2 Corinthians 5.12]- For we commend not ourselves again unto you, but give you occasion to glory on our behalf, that ye may have somewhat to answer them which glory in appearance, and not in heart.*
 - d. *[Proverbs 14.10]- The heart knoweth his own bitterness; and a stranger doth not intermeddle with his joy.*
 3. Spiritual joys are sweeter than others, they are better than wine.
 - a. *[Song of Solomon 1.2]- Let him kiss me with the kisses of his mouth: for thy love is better than wine.*
 - b. *[Galatians 6.14]- But God forbid that I should glory, save in the cross of our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom the world is crucified unto me, and I unto the world.*
 4. Spiritual joys are more pure; they are not tempered with any bitter ingredients.
 5. They are satisfying joys.
 - a. *[John 16.24]- Hitherto have ye asked nothing in my name: ask, and ye shall receive, that your joy may be full.*
 - b. *[Ecclesiastes 1.8]- All things are full of labour; man cannot utter it: the eye is not satisfied with seeing, nor the ear filled with hearing.*
 - c. *[Psalm 94.19]- In the multitude of my thoughts within me thy comforts delight my soul.*
 6. They are stronger joys than worldly joys.
 - a. *[Hebrews 6.18]- That by two immutable things, in which it was impossible for God to lie, we might have a strong consolation, who have fled for refuge to lay hold upon the hope set before us:*

- b. *[1 Thessalonians 1.6]- And ye became followers of us, and of the Lord, having received the word in much affliction, with joy of the Holy Ghost.*
 - c. *[2 Corinthians 6.10]- As sorrowful, yet alway rejoicing; as poor, yet making many rich; as having nothing, and yet possessing all things.*
 - 7. They are unwearied joys.
 - 8. They are abiding joys.
- F. Why is this joy to be labored for?
- 1. Because it is self-existent, it can subsist in the absence of all other carnal joy.
 - a. *[Habakkuk 3.17]- Although the fig tree shall not blossom, neither shall fruit be in the vines; the labour of the olive shall fail, and the fields shall yield no meat; the flock shall be cut off from the fold, and there shall be no herd in the stalls:*
 - 2. Because spiritual joy carries the soul through duty cheerfully.
 - a. *[Isaiah 58.13]- If thou turn away thy foot from the sabbath, from doing thy pleasure on my holy day; and call the sabbath a delight, the holy of the LORD, honourable; and shalt honour him, not doing thine own ways, nor finding thine own pleasure, nor speaking thine own words:*
 - b. *[Isaiah 56.7]- Even them will I bring to my holy mountain, and make them joyful in my house of prayer: their burnt offerings and their sacrifices shall be accepted upon mine altar; for mine house shall be called an house of prayer for all people.*
 - 3. It is called the Kingdom of God.
 - a. *[Romans 14.17]- For the kingdom of God is not meat and drink; but righteousness, and peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost.*
 - b. *[John 17.13]- And now come I to thee; and these things I speak in the world, that they might have my joy fulfilled in themselves.*
- G. What shall we do to obtain this spiritual joy? Walk consistently and spiritually.
- 1. Observe our hours. Set time every day apart for God.
 - 2. Mourn for sin.
 - a. *[Isaiah 57.18]-I have seen his ways, and will heal him: I will lead him also, and restore comforts unto him and to his mourners.*
 - 3. Keep the book of conscience fair written.
 - 4. Be often upon your knees, pray with life and fervency.
 - a. *[1 Samuel 1.18]- And she said, Let thine handmaid find grace in thy sight. So the woman went her way, and did eat, and her countenance was no more sad.*
- H. How shall we comfort those who want joy? Such as walk in close communion with God have more than others.
- 1. Initial joy.
 - a. *[Psalm 97.11]- Light is sown for the righteous, and gladness for the upright in heart.*
 - 2. A believer has real, though not royal comforts.
 - a. *[Psalm 104.34]- My meditation of him shall be sweet: I will be glad in the LORD.*
 - 3. He has supporting, though not transporting comforts
 - a. *[Psalm 138.3]- In the day when I cried thou answeredst me, and strengthenedst me with strength in my soul.*

- I. Use 1: Then see that religion is no melancholy thing; it brings joy.
 1. *[2 Corinthians 12.4]- How that he was caught up into paradise, and heard unspeakable words, which it is not lawful for a man to utter.*
- J. Use 2: If God gives His people such joy in this life, oh! Then, what glorious joy will He give them in heaven!
 1. *[Matthew 25.21]- His lord said unto him, Well done, thou good and faithful servant: thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord.*

XXXIX. Growth in Grace

- A. Proof text
 1. *[2 Peter 3.18]- But grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. To him be glory both now and for ever. Amen.*
- B. Grace is progressive and growing as a tree.
 1. *[Isaiah 61.3]- To appoint unto them that mourn in Zion, to give unto them beauty for ashes, the oil of joy for mourning, the garment of praise for the spirit of heaviness; that they might be called trees of righteousness, the planting of the LORD, that he might be glorified.*
 2. *[Hosea 14.5]- I will be as the dew unto Israel: he shall grow as the lily, and cast forth his roots as Lebanon.*
 3. *[1 Corinthians 3.6]- I have planted, Apollos watered; but God gave the increase.*
- C. In how many ways may a Christian be said to grow in grace?
 1. He grows vigore, in the exercise of grace.
 - a. *[1 Peter 1.3]- Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, which according to his abundant mercy hath begotten us again unto a lively hope by the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead,*
 - b. *[Song of Solomon 3.6]- Who is this that cometh out of the wilderness like pillars of smoke, perfumed with myrrh and frankincense, with all powders of the merchant?*
 2. A Christian grows gradu, in the degree of grace.
 - a. *[Psalm 84.7]- They go from strength to strength, every one of them in Zion appeareth before God.*
 - b. *[Romans 1.17]- For therein is the righteousness of God revealed from faith to faith: as it is written, The just shall live by faith.*
 - c. *[Philippians 1.9]- And this I pray, that your love may abound yet more and more in knowledge and in all judgment;*
- D. What is the manner of a Christian's growth?
 1. It is to grow less in one's own eyes.
 - a. *[Psalm 22.6]- But I am a worm, and no man; a reproach of men, and despised of the people.*
 - b. *[Job 42.6]- Wherefore I abhor myself, and repent in dust and ashes.*
 2. The right manner of growth is to grow proportionately, to grow in one grace as well as another.
 - a. *[2 Peter 1.5]- And beside this, giving all diligence, add to your faith virtue; and to virtue knowledge;*
 3. The right manner of growth is, when a Christian has grace suitable to his several employments and occasions.
 - a. *"When corruptions are strong, and he has grace able to give check with them; burdens are heavy, and he has patience able to bear them; temptations fierce, and he has faith able to resist them."*

- E. Whence is it that true grace cannot but grow?
1. It is proper for grace to grow; it is *semen manens*, an enduring seed.
 - a. **[1 John 3.9]- Whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin; for his seed remaineth in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God.**
 2. Grace cannot but grow, from its sweetness and excellence.
 - a. *“Grace is the image of God, and a Christian thinks he can never be enough like God. Grace instills peace; a Christian, therefore, strives to grow in grace that he may grow in peace.”*
 3. Grace cannot but grow, from a believer’s in grafting into Christ.
 - a. Christ is so full of sap, and vivifying influence, that He makes all who are grafted into Him, grow fruitful.
 - b. **[Hosea 14.8]- Ephraim shall say, What have I to do any more with idols? I have heard him, and observed him: I am like a green fir tree. From me is thy fruit found.**
- F. What motives or incentives are there to make us grow in grace?
1. Growth is the end of the ordinances.
 - a. **[1 Peter 2.2]- As newborn babes, desire the sincere milk of the word, that ye may grow thereby:**
 2. The growth in grace is the best evidence of the truth of it.
 3. Growth in grace is the beauty of a Christian.
 4. The more we grow in grace, the more glory we bring to God.
 - a. **[John 15.8]- Herein is my Father glorified, that ye bear much fruit; so shall ye be my disciples.**
 - b. **[Philippians 1.11]- Being filled with the fruits of righteousness, which are by Jesus Christ, unto the glory and praise of God.**
 5. The more we grow in grace, the more will God love us.
 - a. **[Song of Solomon 6.11]- I went down into the garden of nuts to see the fruits of the valley, and to see whether the vine flourished and the pomegranates budded.**
 - b. **[Matthew 8.10]- When Jesus heard it, he marvelled, and said to them that followed, Verily I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no, not in Israel.**
 6. We need to grow in grace.
 - a. **[1 Thessalonians 3.10]- Night and day praying exceedingly that we might see your face, and might perfect that which is lacking in your faith?**
 - b. **[Luke 17.5]- And the apostles said unto the Lord, Increase our faith.**
 - c. **[2 Samuel 3.39]- And I am this day weak, though anointed king; and these men the sons of Zeruiah be too hard for me: the LORD shall reward the doer of evil according to his wickedness.**
 7. The growth in grace will hinder the growth of corruption.
 8. We cannot grow too much in grace.
 - a. **[2 Thessalonians 1.3]- We are bound to thank God always for you, brethren, as it is meet, because that your faith groweth exceedingly, and the charity of every one of you all toward each other aboundeth;**
 - b. **[Psalm 105.3]- Glory ye in his holy name: let the heart of them rejoice that seek the LORD.**
 9. Such as do not grow in grace, decay in grace.
 - a. *“Non progredi in via est regredi – Not to go forward in the Christian life is to turn back.”*

10. The more we grow in grace, the more we shall flourish in glory.
 - a. *[Luke 19.17]- And he said unto him, Well, thou good servant: because thou hast been faithful in a very little, have thou authority over ten cities.*
- G. Use 1: Lament the want of growth
 1. *[2 Timothy 3.13]- But evil men and seducers shall wax worse and worse, deceiving, and being deceived.*
 2. *[Zephaniah 3.5]- The just LORD is in the midst thereof; he will not do iniquity: every morning doth he bring his judgment to light, he faileth not; but the unjust knoweth no shame.*
- H. How shall we know whether we grow in grace?
 1. The signs of our not growing, but rather falling into a spiritual consumption.
 - a. When we have lost our spiritual appetite.
 - 1.) *[1 Kings 1.1]- Now king David was old and stricken in years; and they covered him with clothes, but he gat no heat.*
 - b. When we grow more worldly.
 - 1.) *[Revelation 3.2]- Be watchful, and strengthen the things which remain, that are ready to die: for I have not found thy works perfect before God.*
 - c. When we are less troubled about sin.
 2. The signs of our growing in grace.
 - a. When we have got beyond our former measures of grace.
 - b. When we are more firmly rooted in religion.
 - 1.) *[Colossians 2.7]- Rooted and built up in him, and stablished in the faith, as ye have been taught, abounding therein with thanksgiving.*
 - c. When we have a more spiritual frame of heart.
 - 1.) When we are more spiritual in our principles; when we oppose sin out of love to God and because it strikes at His holiness.
 - 2.) When we are more spiritual in our affections.
 - 3.) When we are spiritual in the performance of duty.
 - a.) *[Romans 12.11]- Not slothful in business; fervent in spirit; serving the Lord;*
 - d. When grace gets ground by opposition.
 - 1.) *[Acts 4.8, 11]- Then Peter, filled with the Holy Ghost, said unto them, Ye rulers of the people, and elders of Israel, This is the stone which was set at nought of you builders, which is become the head of the corner.*
- I. What shall we do to grow in grace?
 1. Take heed of that which will hinder growth, as love of any sin.
 2. Use all means for growth in grace.
 - a. Exercise.
 - 1.) *[1 Timothy 4.7]- But refuse profane and old wives' fables, and exercise thyself rather unto godliness.*
 - b. Be humble.
 - 1.) *[1 Peter 5.5]- Likewise, ye younger, submit yourselves unto the elder. Yea, all of you be subject one to another, and be clothed with humility: for God resisteth the proud, and giveth grace to the humble.*

- c. Pray to God for spiritual growth.
 - 1.) *[Hebrews 12.10]- For they verily for a few days chastened us after their own pleasure; but he for our profit, that we might be partakers of his holiness.*

J. How may we comfort such as complain they do not grow in grace?

- 1. *[Proverbs 13.7]- There is that maketh himself rich, yet hath nothing: there is that maketh himself poor, yet hath great riches.*

XL. Perseverance.

A. Proof text

- 1. *[1 Peter 1.5]- Who are kept by the power of God through faith unto salvation ready to be revealed in the last time.*

B. Believers Persevere

- 1. Those only in profession may fall away.
 - a. *[2 Timothy 4.10]- For Demas hath forsaken me, having loved this present world, and is departed unto Thessalonica; Crescens to Galatia, Titus unto Dalmatia.*
 - b. *[Matthew 7.26]- And every one that heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man, which built his house upon the sand:*
- 2. If believers were left to stand on their own legs would fall away finally.
- 3. Although believers do not fall away actually, and lose all their grace, yet their grace may fail in degree, and they may make a great breach on their sanctification.
 - a. “Grace may be *moritura, non mortua* – dying, but not dead.”
 - b. *[Revelation 3.2]- Be watchful, and strengthen the things which remain, that are ready to die: for I have not found thy works perfect before God.*
- c. The particulars of dying grace.
 - 1.) The lively actings of grace may be suspended.
 - a.) *[Revelation 2.4]- Nevertheless I have somewhat against thee, because thou hast left thy first love.*
 - b.) *[Matthew 25.5]- While the bridegroom tarried, they all slumbered and slept.*
 - 2.) “Instead of grace working in the godly, corruption may work; instead of patience, murmuring; instead of heavenliness, earthliness.”
 - a.) *[Psalm 51.11]- Cast me not away from thy presence; and take not thy holy spirit from me.*
 - b.) *[Acts 20.9-10]- And there sat in a window a certain young man named Eutychus, being fallen into a deep sleep: and as Paul was long preaching, he sunk down with sleep, and fell down from the third loft, and was taken up dead. And Paul went down, and fell on him, and embracing him said, Trouble not yourselves; for his life is in him.*

C. Means by which believers Persevere.

- 1. Ordinances.
 - a. Prayer.
 - b. Reading and meditating on the Scriptures.
 - c. The sacraments.
 - d. *[Matthew 26.41]- Watch and pray, that ye enter not into temptation: the spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak.*
 - e. *[Acts 27.31]- Paul said to the centurion and to the soldiers, Except these abide in the ship, ye cannot be saved.*
- 2. *Auxilio Spiritus*, by the sacred influence and concurrence of the Spirit.
 - a. *[1 Peter 1.9]- Receiving the end of your faith, even the salvation of your souls.*

- b. *[2 Timothy 1.14]- That good thing which was committed unto thee keep by the Holy Ghost which dwelleth in us.*
 - c. *[John 7.38]- He that believeth on me, as the scripture hath said, out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water.*
 - 3. Christ's daily intercession.
 - a. *[John 17.11]- And now I am no more in the world, but these are in the world, and I come to thee. Holy Father, keep through thine own name those whom thou hast given me, that they may be one, as we are.*
 - b. *[Luke 22.32]- But I have prayed for thee, that thy faith fail not: and when thou art converted, strengthen thy brethren.*
- D. Arguments to prove the saint's perseverance
 - 1. *A veritate Dei*, from the truth of God,
 - a. God has asserted it.
 - 1.) *[1 John 3.9]- Whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin; for his seed remaineth in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God.*
 - b. God has promised it.
 - 1.) *[John 10.28]- And I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never perish, neither shall any man pluck them out of my hand.*
 - 2.) *[Jeremiah 32.40]- And I will make an everlasting covenant with them, that I will not turn away from them, to do them good; but I will put my fear in their hearts, that they shall not depart from me.*
 - 3.) *[Hosea 2.19]- And I will betroth thee unto me for ever; yea, I will betroth thee unto me in righteousness, and in judgment, and in lovingkindness, and in mercies.*
 - 4.) *[Malachi 2.16]- For the LORD, the God of Israel, saith that he hateth putting away: for one covereth violence with his garment, saith the LORD of hosts: therefore take heed to your spirit, that ye deal not treacherously.*
 - 2. *A potentia Dei*, from the power of God.
 - a. *[1 Peter 1.5]- Who are kept by the power of God through faith unto salvation ready to be revealed in the last time.*
 - b. *[2 Corinthians 1.21]- Now he which stablisheth us with you in Christ, and hath anointed us, is God;*
 - c. *[1 Corinthians 1.8]- Who shall also confirm you unto the end, that ye may be blameless in the day of our Lord Jesus Christ.*
 - d. *[Ephesians 1.13]- In whom ye also trusted, after that ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation: in whom also after that ye believed, ye were sealed with that holy Spirit of promise,*
 - e. *"Why not Judas as well as Peter?"*
 - 3. *Ab electione* - from God's electing love.
 - a. *[2 Timothy 2.19]- Nevertheless the foundation of God standeth sure, having this seal, The Lord knoweth them that are his. And, let every one that nameth the name of Christ depart from iniquity.*
 - 4. *Ab unione cum Christo* – from believers, union with Christ.
 - a. *[Ephesians 5.23]- For the husband is the head of the wife, even as Christ is the head of the church: and he is the saviour of the body.*
 - 5. *Ab emptione* – from the nature of a purchase.
 - a. *[Hebrews 9.12]- Neither by the blood of goats and calves, but by his own blood he entered in once into the holy place, having obtained eternal redemption for us.*

6. A *Victoria supra mundum* – from a believer’s victory over the world.
 - a. ***[1 John 5.4]- For whatsoever is born of God overcometh the world: and this is the victory that overcometh the world, even our faith.***
- E. Answers to the Objections of the Arminians.
1. Objection 1: Such admonitions seem to be superfluous if a saint shall certainly persevere. i.e.
 - a. ***[1 Corinthians 10.12]- Wherefore let him that thinketh he standeth take heed lest he fall.***
 - b. ***[Hebrews 4.1]- Let us therefore fear, lest, a promise being left us of entering into his rest, any of you should seem to come short of it.***
 - c. Answer: They are admonitions are necessary to caution believers against carelessness.
 - 1.) ***[John 15.4]- Abide in me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine; no more can ye, except ye abide in me.***
 2. Objection 2: It is impossible for those who were once enlightened, if they shall fall away, to renew them again to repentance.
 - a. ***[Hebrews 6.4-6]- For it is impossible for those who were once enlightened, and have tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the Holy Ghost, And have tasted the good word of God, and the powers of the world to come, If they shall fall away, to renew them again unto repentance; seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put him to an open shame.***
 - b. Answer: The apostle here speaks of hypocrites; he shows how far they may go, and yet fall away.
 - 1.) “*those who were once enlightened.*” Was not Judas enlightened?
 - 2.) “*and were made partakers of the Holy Ghost.*” Common gifts of the Spirit, not the special grace.
 - 3.) “*have tasted the good word of God.*” Tasting is opposed to eating.
 - 4.) “*and have felt the powers of the world to come.*” They may have such apprehensions of the glory of heaven as to be affected with it.
 - 5.) ***[Matthew 13.20]- But he that received the seed into stony places, the same is he that heareth the word, and anon with joy receiveth it;***
- F. Use 1: For instruction.
1. See the excellence of grace. It perseveres.
 - a. ***[1 John 3.9]- Whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin; for his seed remaineth in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God.***
 - b. ***[Proverbs 8.21]-That I may cause those that love me to inherit substance; and I will fill their treasures.***
 - c. ***[Proverbs 8.18]- Riches and honour are with me; yea, durable riches and righteousness.***
 2. See here that which may excite in the saint’s everlasting love and gratitude to God.
 - a. ***[John 10.27-28]- My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me: And I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never perish, neither shall any man pluck them out of my hand.***
 - 1.) ‘*My sheep*’, there is election, ‘*hear my voice*’, vocation, ‘*and I know them*’, justification, ‘*and they follow me*’, sanctification, and ‘*And I give unto them eternal life*’, glorification.
 - b. ***[1 Samuel 2.9]- He will keep the feet of his saints, and the wicked shall be silent in darkness; for by strength shall no man prevail.***
 3. See whence it is that saints persevere in holiness. It is ascribed solely to the power of God.
 - a. In light of corruption within.

- b. In light of temptations without.
 - c. In light of the world's golden snares, riches and pleasure.
 - 1.) *[Luke 18.24]- And when Jesus saw that he was very sorrowful, he said, How hardly shall they that have riches enter into the kingdom of God!*
 - 2.) *[2 Timothy 4.10]- For Demas hath forsaken me, having loved this present world, and is departed unto Thessalonica; Crescens to Galatia, Titus unto Dalmatia.*
- G. Use 2: For consolation.
- 1. There is nothing that more troubles a child of God than that he fears he shall never hold out.
 - a. *[Leviticus 25.23]- The land shall not be sold for ever: for the land is mine, for ye are strangers and sojourners with me.*
 - b. *[1 John 3.9]- Whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin; for his seed remaineth in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God.*
 - c. *[1 John 2.27]- But the anointing which ye have received of him abideth in you, and ye need not that any man teach you: but as the same anointing teacheth you of all things, and is truth, and is no lie, and even as it hath taught you, ye shall abide in him.*
 - d. *"Grace may be shaken with fears and doubts, but it cannot be plucked up by the roots."* – Augustine.
 - e. If anything should hinder the saints' perseverance, it must be either sin or temptation.
 - 1.) Not the sin of believers.
 - 2.) Not temptation.
 - a.) *[2 Corinthians 12.8]- For this thing I besought the Lord thrice, that it might depart from me.*
 - 2. This perseverance is comfort.
 - a. In the loss of worldly comforts.
 - 1.) *[Luke 10.42]- But one thing is needful: and Mary hath chosen that good part, which shall not be taken away from her.*
 - b. In the hour of death.
- H. Use 3: For exhortation. What motives and incentives are there to make Christians persevere?
- 1. It is the crown and glory of a Christian to persevere.
 - a. *"In Christianis non initia sed fines laudantur* – It is not the beginning of the Christian life that gets the glory but the end of it."
 - b. *[Proverbs 16.31]- The hoary head is a crown of glory, if it be found in the way of righteousness.*
 - c. *[Revelation 2.19]- I know thy works, and charity, and service, and faith, and thy patience, and thy works; and the last to be more than the first.*
 - 2. You are within a few days' march of heaven.
 - a. *[Romans 13.11]- And that, knowing the time, that now it is high time to awake out of sleep: for now is our salvation nearer than when we believed.*
 - 3. How sad is it not to persevere in holiness!
 - a. Exposing oneself to the reproaches of men and the rebukes of God.
 - b. *[Luke 14.30]- Saying, This man began to build, and was not able to finish.*
 - c. *[Hebrews 10.39]- But we are not of them who draw back unto perdition; but of them that believe to the saving of the soul.*
 - 4. The promises of mercy are annexed only to perseverance.
 - a. *[Revelation 3.5]- He that overcometh, the same shall be clothed in white raiment; and I will not blot out his name out of the book of life, but I will confess his name before my Father, and before his angels.*

- b. *[Luke 22.28-29]- Ye are they which have continued with me in my temptations. And I appoint unto you a kingdom, as my Father hath appointed unto me;*
5. What expedients or means may be used for a Christian's perseverance?
- a. Take heed of those things that will make you desist and fall away.
- 1.) Presumption.
- a.) *[Romans 11.20]- Well; because of unbelief they were broken off, and thou standest by faith. Be not highminded, but fear:*
- b.) *[1 Corinthians 10.12]- Wherefore let him that thinketh he standeth take heed lest he fall.*
- 2.) Hypocrisy.
- a.) *[Psalm 78.37]- For their heart was not right with him, neither were they stedfast in his covenant.*
- 3.) Unbelief.
- a.) *[Hebrews 3.12]- Take heed, brethren, lest there be in any of you an evil heart of unbelief, in departing from the living God.*
- b.) *[Psalm 78.22,41]- Because they believed not in God, and trusted not in his salvation: Yea, they turned back and tempted God, and limited the Holy One of Israel.*
- b. If you would be pillars in the temple of God, and persevere in sanctity;
- 1.) Look that you enter into religion upon a right ground; be well grounded in the distinct knowledge of God.
- a.) *[John 4.22]- Ye worship ye know not what: we know what we worship: for salvation is of the Jews.*
- b.) *[Psalm 119.30-31]- I have chosen the way of truth: thy judgments have I laid before me. I have stuck unto thy testimonies: O LORD, put me not to shame.*
- 2.) Get a real work of grace in your heart.
- a.) *[Hebrews 13.9]- Be not carried about with divers and strange doctrines. For it is a good thing that the heart be established with grace; not with meats, which have not profited them that have been occupied therein.*
- b.) *[1 Corinthians 6.11]- And such were some of you: but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God.*
- 3.) If you would persevere, be very sincere.
- a.) *[Psalm 25.21]- Let integrity and uprightness preserve me; for I wait on thee.*
- b.) *[Job 27.6]- My righteousness I hold fast, and will not let it go: my heart shall not reproach me so long as I live.*
- 4.) If you would persevere, be humble.
- a.) *[1 Peter 5.5]- Likewise, ye younger, submit yourselves unto the elder. Yea, all of you be subject one to another, and be clothed with humility: for God resisteth the proud, and giveth grace to the humble.*
- b.) *[Isaiah 57.15]- For thus saith the high and lofty One that inhabiteth eternity, whose name is Holy; I dwell in the high and holy place, with him also that is of a contrite and humble spirit, to revive the spirit of the humble, and to revive the heart of the contrite ones.*
- c.) *"Non requiescet Spiritus Sanctus nisi super humilem – The Holy Spirit will only come to rest over a humble soul."* - Bernard

- 5.) Would you persevere? Cherish the grace of faith.
 - a.) Faith is able *stabilere animum*- to support the spirit.
 - b.) *[2 Corinthians 1.24]- Not for that we have dominion over your faith, but are helpers of your joy: for by faith ye stand.*
 - c.) *[Galatians 5.6]- For in Jesus Christ neither circumcision availeth any thing, nor uncircumcision; but faith which worketh by love.*
- 6.) Would you persevere? Let us seek God's power to help us.
 - a.) *[Psalm 17.5]- Hold up my goings in thy paths, that my footsteps slip not.*
- 7.) If you would persevere, set before your eyes the noble examples of those who have persevered in religion.
 - a.) *[Acts 21.13]- Then Paul answered, What mean ye to weep and to break mine heart? for I am ready not to be bound only, but also to die at Jerusalem for the name of the Lord Jesus.*
 - b.) *[Hebrews 12.1]- Wherefore seeing we also are compassed about with so great a cloud of witnesses, let us lay aside every weight, and the sin which doth so easily beset us, and let us run with patience the race that is set before us,*

DEATH AND THE LAST DAY

XLI. The Death of the Righteous.

A. Proof text

1. *[Philippians 1.21]- For to me to live is Christ, and to die is gain.*
2. *[1 Corinthians 2.2]- For I determined not to know any thing among you, save Jesus Christ, and him crucified.*

B. For me to live is Christ.

1. Christ is the principle of one's life.
 - a. *[Galatians 2.20]- I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me.*
2. Christ is the end of one's life.
 - a. *[Romans 14.8]- For whether we live, we live unto the Lord; and whether we die, we die unto the Lord: whether we live therefore, or die, we are the Lord's.*
3. Christ is the joy of one's life.
 - a. *[Psalm 43.4]- Then will I go unto the altar of God, unto God my exceeding joy: yea, upon the harp will I praise thee, O God my God.*

C. To die is gain.

1. Believers at death shall gain a writ of ease from all sins and troubles; They shall be in a state of impeccability: sin expires with their life.
 - a. *[Psalm 31.10]- For my life is spent with grief, and my years with sighing: my strength faileth because of mine iniquity, and my bones are consumed.*
2. Believers at death shall gain the glorious sight of God.
 - a. They shall see him intellectually.
 - b. They shall behold the glorified body of Jesus Christ.
3. The saints at death shall not only have a sight of God, but shall enjoy His love.

4. Believers at death shall gain a celestial palace.
 - a. *[2 Corinthians 5.1]- For we know that if our earthly house of this tabernacle were dissolved, we have a building of God, an house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens.*
 - b. *[Colossians 1.12]- Giving thanks unto the Father, which hath made us meet to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light:*
 - c. *[Revelation 21.19]- And the foundations of the wall of the city were garnished with all manner of precious stones. The first foundation was jasper; the second, sapphire; the third, a chalcedony; the fourth, an emerald;*
 - d. *[John 14.2]- In my Father's house are many mansions: if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you.*
 - e. *[Revelation 21.21]- And the twelve gates were twelve pearls: every several gate was of one pearl: and the street of the city was pure gold, as it were transparent glass.*
 5. Believers at death shall gain the sweet society of glorified saints and angels.
 - a. The society of the glorified saints.
 - 1.) *[Matthew 17.3]- And, behold, there appeared unto them Moses and Elias talking with him.*
 - b. The society of the angels with the glorified eye of understandings.
 - 1.) *[Matthew 28.3]- His countenance was like lightning, and his raiment white as snow:*
 6. Believers at death shall gain perfection of holiness.
 - a. *[Romans 8.23]- And not only they, but ourselves also, which have the firstfruits of the Spirit, even we ourselves groan within ourselves, waiting for the adoption, to wit, the redemption of our body.*
 7. At death, the saints will gain a royal magnificent feast.
 - a. *[Revelation 19.9]- And he saith unto me, Write, Blessed are they which are called unto the marriage supper of the Lamb. And he saith unto me, These are the true sayings of God.*
 - b. *[Revelation 22.2]- In the midst of the street of it, and on either side of the river, was there the tree of life, which bare twelve manner of fruits, and yielded her fruit every month: and the leaves of the tree were for the healing of the nations.*
 - c. *[Revelation 7.16]- They shall hunger no more, neither thirst any more; neither shall the sun light on them, nor any heat.*
 8. Believers at death shall gain honor and dignity.
 - a. *[Revelation 4.4]- And round about the throne were four and twenty seats: and upon the seats I saw four and twenty elders sitting, clothed in white raiment; and they had on their heads crowns of gold.*
 - b. *[1 Peter 5.4]- And when the chief Shepherd shall appear, ye shall receive a crown of glory that fadeth not away.*
 - c. *[2 Corinthians 4.18]- While we look not at the things which are seen, but at the things which are not seen: for the things which are seen are temporal; but the things which are not seen are eternal.*
 - d. *[Psalm 16.11]- Thou wilt shew me the path of life: in thy presence is fulness of joy; at thy right hand there are pleasures for evermore.*
- D. How come the saints to have all this gain?
1. *[Colossians 1.12]- Giving thanks unto the Father, which hath made us meet to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light:*

- E. Use 1: See the great difference between the death of the godly and the wicked.
1. The wicked lose the world.
 2. The wicked lose their souls.
 - a. *[Matthew 16.26-27]- For what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul? For the Son of man shall come in the glory of his Father with his angels; and then he shall reward every man according to his works.*
 3. They lose heaven.
 4. They lose all hope.
 - a. *[Job 8.14]- Whose hope shall be cut off, and whose trust shall be a spider's web.*
- F. Use 2: If saints gain such glorious things at death, well may they desire it.
1. *Nemo ante funera felix* – No one is content before his death.
 2. *[Philippians 1.23]- For I am in a strait betwixt two, having a desire to depart, and to be with Christ; which is far better:*
- G. Use 3: We may here find comfort in the loss of dear and pious relations.

XLII. A Believer's Privilege at Death.

A. A Christian's Hope

1. *[Romans 12.12]- Rejoicing in hope; patient in tribulation; continuing instant in prayer;*
2. *[Proverbs 14.32]- The wicked is driven away in his wickedness: but the righteous hath hope in his death.*
3. *[Luke 6.24]- But woe unto you that are rich! for ye have received your consolation.*
4. *[Ecclesiastes 7.1]- A good name is better than precious ointment; and the day of death than the day of one's birth.*

B. What benefits do believers receive at death?

1. Great immunities and freedoms.
 - a. Freedom from a body of sin.
 - 1.) *[Romans 7.24]- O wretched man that I am! who shall deliver me from the body of this death?*
 - 2.) It weights us down.
 - a.) *[Romans 7.19]- For the good that I would I do not: but the evil which I would not, that I do.*
 - 3.) Sin is more active in it's sphere than grace.
 - 4.) Sin sometimes gets the mastery, and leads a saint captive.
 - a.) *[Romans 7.23]- But I see another law in my members, warring against the law of my mind, and bringing me into captivity to the law of sin which is in my members.*
 - 5.) Sin defiles the soul.
 - 6.) Sin debilitates us, disarms us of our strength.
 - a.) *[2 Samuel 3.39]- And I am this day weak, though anointed king; and these men the sons of Zeruiah be too hard for me: the LORD shall reward the doer of evil according to his wickedness.*
 - 7.) Sin is ever restless.
 - a.) *[Galatians 5.17]- For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh: and these are contrary the one to the other: so that ye cannot do the things that ye would.*

- 8.) Sin adheres to us; we cannot get rid of it.
- 9.) Sin mingles with our duties and graces.
 - a.) *[Acts 12.7]- And, behold, the angel of the Lord came upon him, and a light shined in the prison: and he smote Peter on the side, and raised him up, saying, Arise up quickly. And his chains fell off from his hands.*
 - b.) *[Hebrews 12.23]- To the general assembly and church of the firstborn, which are written in heaven, and to God the Judge of all, and to the spirits of just men made perfect,*
 - c.) *[Ephesians 5.27]- That he might present it to himself a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish.*
- b. Freedom from troubles and encumbrances to which this life is subject.
 - 1.) *[Job 5.7]- Yet man is born unto trouble, as the sparks fly upward.*
 - 2.) *[Proverbs 7.17]- I have perfumed my bed with myrrh, aloes, and cinnamon.*
 - 3.) *[Genesis 47.9]- And Jacob said unto Pharaoh, The days of the years of my pilgrimage are an hundred and thirty years: few and evil have the days of the years of my life been, and have not attained unto the days of the years of the life of my fathers in the days of their pilgrimage.*
 - 4.) *[Genesis 32.30]- And Jacob called the name of the place Peniel: for I have seen God face to face, and my life is preserved.*
 - 5.) Our troubles.
 - a.) Care.
 - 1.) *[Ezekiel 12.19]- And say unto the people of the land, Thus saith the Lord GOD of the inhabitants of Jerusalem, and of the land of Israel; They shall eat their bread with carefulness, and drink their water with astonishment, that her land may be desolate from all that is therein, because of the violence of all them that dwell therein.*
 - b.) Fear.
 - 1.) *[1 John 4.18]- There is no fear in love; but perfect love casteth out fear: because fear hath torment. He that feareth is not made perfect in love.*
 - c.) Labor.
 - 1.) *[Ecclesiastes 1.8]- All things are full of labour; man cannot utter it: the eye is not satisfied with seeing, nor the ear filled with hearing.*
 - 2.) *[Revelation 14.13]- And I heard a voice from heaven saying unto me, Write, Blessed are the dead which die in the Lord from henceforth: Yea, saith the Spirit, that they may rest from their labours; and their works do follow them.*
 - d.) Suffering.
 - 1.) *[Galatians 4.29]- But as then he that was born after the flesh persecuted him that was born after the Spirit, even so it is now.*
 - 2.) *[Revelation 12.3]- And there appeared another wonder in heaven; and behold a great red dragon, having seven heads and ten horns, and seven crowns upon his heads.*
 - 3.) *[Job 3.17]- There the wicked cease from troubling; and there the weary be at rest.*
 - e.) Temptation.
 - 1.) *[1 Peter 5.8]- Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the devil, as a roaring lion, walketh about, seeking whom he may devour:*
 - f.) Sorrow.

- 1.) *[Psalm 31.10]- For my life is spent with grief, and my years with sighing: my strength faileth because of mine iniquity, and my bones are consumed.*
 - 2.) *[Genesis 3.16]- Unto the woman he said, I will greatly multiply thy sorrow and thy conception; in sorrow thou shalt bring forth children; and thy desire shall be to thy husband, and he shall rule over thee.*
 - 3.) *[Ruth 1.20-21]- And she said unto them, Call me not Naomi, call me Mara: for the Almighty hath dealt very bitterly with me. I went out full and the LORD hath brought me home again empty: why then call ye me Naomi, seeing the LORD hath testified against me, and the Almighty hath afflicted me?*
 - 4.) *[Judges 2.4]- And it came to pass, when the angel of the LORD spake these words unto all the children of Israel, that the people lifted up their voice, and wept.*
 - 5.) *[Revelation 7.17]- For the Lamb which is in the midst of the throne shall feed them, and shall lead them unto living fountains of waters: and God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes.*
 - 6.) *[Matthew 9.15]- And Jesus said unto them, Can the children of the bride chamber mourn, as long as the bridegroom is with them? but the days will come, when the bridegroom shall be taken from them, and then shall they fast.*
 - 7.) *[1 Corinthians 15.26]- The last enemy that shall be destroyed is death.*
 - 8.) *[2 Peter 2.7]- And delivered just Lot, vexed with the filthy conversation of the wicked:*
 - 9.) *[Psalm 120.5]- Woe is me, that I sojourn in Mesech, that I dwell in the tents of Kedar!*
2. The bodies of believers are united to Christ in the grave, and shall rest there till the resurrection.
 - a. *[1 Thessalonians 4.14]- For if we believe that Jesus died and rose again, even so them also which sleep in Jesus will God bring with him.*
 3. The souls of believers pass into glory.
 - a. The full and sweet fruition of God.
 - 1.) Seeing Him.
 - a.) How shall we see God?
 - 1.) *[1 John 3.2]- Beloved, now are we the sons of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be: but we know that, when he shall appear, we shall be like him; for we shall see him as he is.*
 - 2.) Intellectually, with the eyes of the mind.
 - 3.) We shall corporately, behold the glorified body of Jesus Christ.
 - a.) *[Ecclesiastes 1.8]- All things are full of labour; man cannot utter it: the eye is not satisfied with seeing, nor the ear filled with hearing.*
 - 4.) Our seeing God will be transforming.
 - a.) *[1 John 3.2]- Beloved, now are we the sons of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be: but we know that, when he shall appear, we shall be like him; for we shall see him as he is.*
 - b.) *[Exodus 34.35]- And the children of Israel saw the face of Moses, that the skin of Moses' face shone: and Moses put the vail upon his face again, until he went in to speak with him.*
 - c.) *[Psalm 17.15]- As for me, I will behold thy face in righteousness: I shall be satisfied, when I awake, with thy likeness.*
 - 5.) Without weariness.

- 2.) Loving Him.
 - a.) *[1 John 4.18]- There is no fear in love; but perfect love casteth out fear: because fear hath torment. He that feareth is not made perfect in love.*
- 3.) God loving us.
 - a.) *[1 John 4.16]- And we have known and believed the love that God hath to us. God is love; and he that dwelleth in love dwelleth in God, and God in him.*
 - b.) *[Ephesians 5.27]- That he might present it to himself a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish.*
 - c.) *[Ephesians 3.19]- And to know the love of Christ, which passeth knowledge, that ye might be filled with all the fulness of God.*
 - d.) *[Matthew 25.21]- His lord said unto him, Well done, thou good and faithful servant: thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord.*
 - e.) *[1 Peter 1.8]- Whom having not seen, ye love; in whom, though now ye see him not, yet believing, ye rejoice with joy unspeakable and full of glory:*
 - f.) *[Revelation 14.2]- And I heard a voice from heaven, as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of a great thunder: and I heard the voice of harpers harping with their harps:*
- b. The good society.
 - 1.) *[Hebrews 12.23]- To the general assembly and church of the firstborn, which are written in heaven, and to God the Judge of all, and to the spirits of just men made perfect,*
 - 2.) *[Matthew 17.3]- And, behold, there appeared unto them Moses and Elias talking with him.*
- c. The perfection in holiness.
- d. Dignity and honor.
 - 1.) *[Revelation 7.9]- After this I beheld, and, lo, a great multitude, which no man could number, of all nations, and kindreds, and people, and tongues, stood before the throne, and before the Lamb, clothed with white robes, and palms in their hands;*
 - 2.) *[Psalm 149.9]- To execute upon them the judgment written: this honour have all his saints. Praise ye the LORD.*
- e. Harmony and union among the heavenly inhabitants.
- f. Blessed rest.
 - 1.) *[2 Corinthians 4.8]- We are troubled on every side, yet not distressed; we are perplexed, but not in despair;*
- g. Eternity.
 - 1.) *[2 Corinthians 4.17]- For our light affliction, which is but for a moment, worketh for us a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory;*
 - 2.) *[1 Peter 5.4]- And when the chief Shepherd shall appear, ye shall receive a crown of glory that fadeth not away.*
 - 3.) *[Psalm 16.11]- Thou wilt shew me the path of life: in thy presence is fulness of joy; at thy right hand there are pleasures for evermore.*
- h. Immediate passing from death to glory.
 - 1.) *[Matthew 10.28]- And fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: but rather fear him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell.*

- 2.) *[2 Corinthians 5.8]- We are confident, I say, and willing rather to be absent from the body, and to be present with the Lord.*
 - 3.) *[Luke 23.43]- And Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, Today shalt thou be with me in paradise.*
 - 4.) *[2 Corinthians 12.4]- How that he was caught up into paradise, and heard unspeakable words, which it is not lawful for a man to utter.*
- C. Use 1: See what little cause believers have to fear death.
1. *[Revelation 19.9]- And he saith unto me, Write, Blessed are they which are called unto the marriage supper of the Lamb. And he saith unto me, These are the true sayings of God.*
- D. Use 2: Spend much time in musing upon those benefits, which you shall have, by Christ at death.
1. *[Psalm 139.18]- If I should count them, they are more in number than the sand: when I awake, I am still with thee.*
- E. Use 3: Comfort to the saints
1. Under their wants.
 - a. *[1 John 3.2]- Beloved, now are we the sons of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be: but we know that, when he shall appear, we shall be like him; for we shall see him as he is.*
 2. To make us go cheerfully through our sufferings.
 - a. The saints are *Haeres crucis* – an heir of the Cross – Luther.

XLIII. The Resurrection

- A. Proof text
1. *[John 5.28-29]- Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice, And shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation.*
- B. Benefits of believers from Christ at the resurrection.
1. The bodies of believers shall be raised up in glory.
 - a. *[Hebrews 6.2]- Of the doctrine of baptisms, and of laying on of hands, and of resurrection of the dead, and of eternal judgment.*
 - b. *[Job 19.26]- And though after my skin worms destroy this body, yet in my flesh shall I see God:*
 - c. *[1 Corinthians 15.53]- For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality.*
 - d. Arguments proving the resurrection.
 - 1.) By Scripture.
 - 2.) Christ is risen; therefore the bodies of the saints must rise.
 - 3.) God's justice. If God be a just God. He will reward the bodies of the saints as well as their souls.
 - 4.) If the body did not rise again, a believer would not be completely happy; for, the soul cannot subsist without the body, yet it has appetitus unionis – a desire of reunion with the body.
 - 5.) The resurrection does not oppose reason, but transcends it.
 - 6.) Resemblances of the resurrection in nature.
 - a.) Corn, which is sown in the ground, dies before it springs up.
 - 1.) *[1 Corinthians 15.36]- Thou fool, that which thou sowest is not quickened, except it die:*
 - b.) In winter, the fruits of the earth die: in spring there is a resurrection of them.

- 7.) *[Matthew 27.52]- And the graves were opened; and many bodies of the saints which slept arose,*
- 8.) When the dust of many are mingled together, the wise God is able to reinvest every soul with it's own body.
- 9.) All souls shall be raised, both the righteous and wicked.
 - a.) *[Acts 24.15]- And have hope toward God, which they themselves also allow, that there shall be a resurrection of the dead, both of the just and unjust.*
 - b.) *[Revelation 20.12]- And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which is the book of life: and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works.*
 - c.) The bodies of the wicked shall be raised with ignominy.
 - 1.) *[Isaiah 66.24]- And they shall go forth, and look upon the carcases of the men that have transgressed against me: for their worm shall not die, neither shall their fire be quenched; and they shall be an abhorring unto all flesh.*
 - 2.) *[1 Corinthians 15.43]- It is sown in dishonour; it is raised in glory: it is sown in weakness; it is raised in power:*
 - 3.) *[Matthew 13.43]- Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father. Who hath ears to hear, let him hear.*
 - d.) The bodies of the righteous shall rise out of their graves with triumph.
 - 1.) *[Isaiah 26.19]- Thy dead men shall live, together with my dead body shall they arise. Awake and sing, ye that dwell in dust: for thy dew is as the dew of herbs, and the earth shall cast out the dead.*
 - 2.) *[Genesis 40.21-22]- And he restored the chief butler unto his butlership again; and he gave the cup into Pharaoh's hand: But he hanged the chief baker: as Joseph had interpreted to them.*
- e. Use 1: Believe this doctrine of the resurrection; that the same body that dies shall rise again, and with the soul be crowned.
 - 1.) *[1 Corinthians 15.14]- And if Christ be not risen, then is our preaching vain, and your faith is also vain.*
- f. Use 2: The body shall rise again. This was Job's comfort.
 - 1.) *[Job 19.26]- And though after my skin worms destroy this body, yet in my flesh shall I see God:*
 - 2.) *[Genesis 46.29]- And Joseph made ready his chariot, and went up to meet Israel his father, to Goshen, and presented himself unto him; and he fell on his neck, and wept on his neck a good while.*
- g. Use 3: The resurrection of the body is a cordial when a Christian is dying.
 - 1.) *[1 Samuel 26.22]- And David answered and said, Behold the king's spear! and let one of the young men come over and fetch it.*
 - 2.) But how shall we know that our bodies will be raised to a glorious resurrection?
 - a.) We have part in the first resurrection, rising by repentance out of the grave of sin.
 - b.) *[Revelation 20.6]- Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years.*
- h. Use 4: Seeing you expect your bodies shall rise to glory, keep them unspotted from sin.
 - 1.) *[1 Corinthians 6.15]- Know ye not that your bodies are the members of Christ? shall I then take the members of Christ, and make them the members of an harlot? God forbid.*

- 2.) ***[1 Corinthians 6.20]- For ye are bought with a price: therefore glorify God in your body, and in your spirit, which are God's***
- 3.) What support or comfort do we have when our bodies are laid in the grave for many years?
 - a.) God will not leave His people in a grave.
 - 1.) ***[2 Samuel 21.10]- And Rizpah the daughter of Aiah took sackcloth, and spread it for her upon the rock, from the beginning of harvest until water dropped upon them out of heaven, and suffered neither the birds of the air to rest on them by day, nor the beasts of the field by night.***
 - b.) The bodies of the saints in the grave, though separated from their souls, are united to Christ.
 - c.) When the bodies of the saints are in the sepulcher, their souls are in paradise.
 - 1.) ***[Ecclesiastes 12.7]- Then shall the dust return to the earth as it was: and the spirit shall return unto God who gave it.***
 - 2.) ***[Numbers 13.20]- And what the land is, whether it be fat or lean, whether there be wood therein, or not. And be ye of good courage, and bring of the fruit of the land. Now the time was the time of the firstripe grapes.***
 - d.) When God's time is come, the Lord will go down with us into the grave, and will surely bring us out again.
 - 1.) ***[Revelation 20.13]- And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works.***
 - 2.) ***[Genesis 46.4]- I will go down with thee into Egypt; and I will also surely bring thee up again: and Joseph shall put his hand upon thine eyes.***
 - e.) Though the bodies of the saints shall rot and be loathsome in the grave, yet afterwards they shall be made illustrious and glorious.
 - 1.) Perfection of parts. There shall be a full proportion of all the members.
 - a.) ***[Acts 3.21]- Whom the heaven must receive until the times of restitution of all things, which God hath spoken by the mouth of all his holy prophets since the world began.***
 - 2.) Splendor-the bodies of the saints shall have a graceful majesty in them.
 - a.) ***[Acts 6.15]- And all that sat in the council, looking stedfastly on him, saw his face as it had been the face of an angel.***
 - b.) ***[Philippians 3.21]- Who shall change our vile body, that it may be fashioned like unto his glorious body, according to the working whereby he is able even to subdue all things unto himself.***
 - 3.) Free from the necessities of nature, as hunger and thirst.
 - a.) ***[Revelation 7.16]- They shall hunger no more, neither thirst any more; neither shall the sun light on them, nor any heat.***
 - 4.) Shall be swift and nimble.
 - a.) ***[Matthew 22.30]- For in the resurrection they neither marry, nor are given in marriage, but are as the angels of God in heaven.***
 - b.) ***[Daniel 9.21]- Yea, whiles I was speaking in prayer, even the man Gabriel, whom I had seen in the vision at the beginning, being caused to fly swiftly, touched me about the time of the evening oblation.***
 - 5.) Shall be firm and strong.

- a.) *[1 Corinthians 15.43]- It is sown in dishonour; it is raised in glory: it is sown in weakness; it is raised in power:*
- 6.) Will be immortal.
 - a.) *[1 Corinthians 15.53]- For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality.*
 - b.) *[Luke 20.36]- Neither can they die any more: for they are equal unto the angels; and are the children of God, being the children of the resurrection.*
 - c.) *[Revelation 21.4]- And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away.*
- 2. Believers shall be openly acknowledged and acquitted in the Day of Judgment.
 - a. Proposition: There will be a Day of Judgment.
 - 1.) *[2 Corinthians 5.10]- For we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ; that every one may receive the things done in his body, according to that he hath done, whether it be good or bad.*
 - 2.) *[Revelation 6.15]- And the kings of the earth, and the great men, and the rich men, and the chief captains, and the mighty men, and every bondman, and every free man, hid themselves in the dens and in the rocks of the mountains;*
 - b. How does it appear that there shall be a Day of Judgment?
 - 1.) By the testimony of the Scripture.
 - a.) *[Ecclesiastes 12.14]- For God shall bring every work into judgment, with every secret thing, whether it be good, or whether it be evil.*
 - b.) *[Psalm 96.13]- Before the LORD: for he cometh, for he cometh to judge the earth: he shall judge the world with righteousness, and the people with his truth.*
 - c.) *[Daniel 7.9-10]- I beheld till the thrones were cast down, and the Ancient of days did sit, whose garment was white as snow, and the hair of his head like the pure wool: his throne was like the fiery flame, and his wheels as burning fire. A fiery stream issued and came forth from before him: thousand thousands ministered unto him, and ten thousand times ten thousand stood before him: the judgment was set, and the books were opened.*
 - 2.) From the petty sessions kept in a man's own conscience.
 - a.) *[Romans 13.5]- Wherefore ye must needs be subject, not only for wrath, but also for conscience sake.*
 - b.) *[2 Corinthians 5.11]- Knowing therefore the terror of the Lord, we persuade men; but we are made manifest unto God; and I trust also are made manifest in your consciences.*
 - c.) *[1 Timothy 4.2]- Speaking lies in hypocrisy; having their conscience seared with a hot iron;*
 - c. Why must there be a Day of Judgment?
 - 1.) There must be a day of retribution, in which God may render to every one according to his work.
 - 2.) *[Matthew 16.27]- For the Son of Man shall come in the glory of His Father with His angels; and then He shall reward every man according to his works.*
 - d. Who shall be judge? The Lord Jesus Christ.
 - 1.) *[John 5.22]- For the Father judgeth no man, but hath committed all judgment unto the Son:*
 - 2.) He is fit to be judge.

- a.) In His manhood.
 - 1.) *[Revelation 1.7]- Behold, he cometh with clouds; and every eye shall see him, and they also which pierced him: and all kindreds of the earth shall wail because of him. Even so, Amen.*
- b.) In His Godhead.
 - 1.) *[Zechariah 3.9]- For behold the stone that I have laid before Joshua; upon one stone shall be seven eyes: behold, I will engrave the graving thereof, saith the LORD of hosts, and I will remove the iniquity of that land in one day.*
 - 2.) *[Psalm 2.9]- Thou shalt break them with a rod of iron; thou shalt dash them in pieces like a potter's vessel.*
- e. When will the time of judgment be?
 - 1.) *[Matthew 24.36]- But of that day and hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels of heaven, but my Father only.*
 - 2.) *[Matthew 24.12]- And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many shall wax cold.*
- f. What shall be the modus, or manner of trial?
 - 1.) The citing of men to the court.
 - a.) *[Revelation 20.12]- And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which is the book of life: and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works.*
 - b.) *[1 Thessalonians 4.16]- For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first:*
 - c.) *[Matthew 24.31]- And he shall send his angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they shall gather together his elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other.*
 - 2.) The approach of the judge to the tribunal.
 - a.) This will be terrible to the wicked.
 - 1.) *[Acts 24.25]- And as he reasoned of righteousness, temperance, and judgment to come, Felix trembled, and answered, Go thy way for this time; when I have a convenient season, I will call for thee.*
 - 2.) *[Daniel 7.10]- A fiery stream issued and came forth from before him: thousand thousands ministered unto him, and ten thousand times ten thousand stood before him: the judgment was set, and the books were opened.*
 - 3.) *[Genesis 45.4]- And Joseph said unto his brethren, Come near to me, I pray you. And they came near. And he said, I am Joseph your brother, whom ye sold into Egypt.*
 - b.) This will be comfortable to the righteous.
 - 1.) *[Isaiah 53.2]- For he shall grow up before him as a tender plant, and as a root out of a dry ground: he hath no form nor comeliness; and when we shall see him, there is no beauty that we should desire him.*
 - 2.) *[Mark 8.38]- Whosoever therefore shall be ashamed of me and of my words in this adulterous and sinful generation; of him also shall the Son of man be ashamed, when he cometh in the glory of his Father with the holy angels.*
 - 3.) The trial itself, which has a dark and a light side.

- a.) It will fall heavy on the wicked.
 - 1.) *[Revelation 20.12]- And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which is the book of life: and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works.*
 - 2.) *[Matthew 25.41]- Then shall he say also unto them on the left hand, Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels:*
 - 3.) *[Psalm 51.4]- Against thee, thee only, have I sinned, and done this evil in thy sight: that thou mightest be justified when thou speakest, and be clear when thou judgest.*
- b.) It will increase the joy and happiness of the righteous.
- g. At that day Christ their judge will own them by name.
 - 1.) *[Luke 12.8]- Also I say unto you, Whosoever shall confess me before men, him shall the Son of man also confess before the angels of God:*
 - 2.) Christ will plead His own blood for the saints.
 - 3.) Christ will vindicate them from all unjust censures.
 - a.) *[Acts 24.5]- For we have found this man a pestilent fellow, and a mover of sedition among all the Jews throughout the world, and a ringleader of the sect of the Nazarenes:*
 - b.) *[Psalm 37.6]- And he shall bring forth thy righteousness as the light, and thy judgment as the noonday.*
 - c.) *[Numbers 16.5]- And he spake unto Korah and unto all his company, saying, Even to morrow the LORD will shew who are his, and who is holy; and will cause him to come near unto him: even him whom he hath chosen will he cause to come near unto him.*
 - 4.) Christ will absolve His people before men and angels.
 - a.) *[John 18.38]- Pilate saith unto him, What is truth? And when he had said this, he went out again unto the Jews, and saith unto them, I find in him no fault at all.*
 - b.) *[Matthew 25.34]- Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world:*
 - 5.) Christ will mention before men and angels all of the good deeds the saints have done.
 - a.) *[Matthew 25.35]- For I was an hungred, and ye gave me meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me drink: I was a stranger, and ye took me in:*
 - 6.) Christ will call His saints from the bar, to sit upon the bench with Him to judge the world.
 - a.) *[Jude 14]- And Enoch also, the seventh from Adam, prophesied of these, saying, Behold, the Lord cometh with ten thousands of his saints,*
 - b.) *[1 Corinthians 6.2]- Do ye not know that the saints shall judge the world? and if the world shall be judged by you, are ye unworthy to judge the smallest matters?*
 - 7.) The saints shall be fully crowned with the enjoyment of God for ever.
 - a.) *[Psalm 16.11]- Thou wilt shew me the path of life: in thy presence is fulness of joy; at thy right hand there are pleasures for evermore.*
 - b.) *[1 Thessalonians 4.17]- Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord.*

- C. Use 1: It is sad news to the wicked, that they shall come to judgment, but not stand in judgment.
1. *[Psalm 1.5]- Therefore the ungodly shall not stand in the judgment, nor sinners in the congregation of the righteous.*
 2. The Day of Judgment is a comfort.
 - a. *[1 Thessalonians 4.16-18]- For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first: Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord. Wherefore comfort one another with these words.*
 - b. In weakness of grace. Christ puts His merits in the scales, and makes it pass current.
 - c. For those who have met unrighteous judgment in the world.
- D. Use 2: Meditate much upon the Day of Judgment.
1. Meditation shall make us very sincere.
 2. It should keep us from judging our brethren.
 - a. *[James 4.12]- There is one lawgiver, who is able to save and to destroy: who art thou that judgest another?*
- E. Use 3: So demean and carry yourselves that, at the last Day of Judgment, you may be sure to be acquitted and have glorious privileges with which the saints be crowned.
1. If you would stand acquitted at the day of judgment, then
 - a. Labor to get into Christ.
 - 1.) *[Philippians 3.9]- And be found in him, not having mine own righteousness, which is of the law, but that which is through the faith of Christ, the righteousness which is of God by faith:*
 - 2.) *[Romans 8.1]- There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.*
 - b. Labor for humility.
 - 1.) *[2 Corinthians 12.11]- I am become a fool in glorying; ye have compelled me: for I ought to have been commended of you: for in nothing am I behind the very chiefest apostles, though I be nothing.*
 - 2.) *[Job 22.29]- When men are cast down, then thou shalt say, There is lifting up; and he shall save the humble person.*
 2. If you would stand acquitted at the last day, keep a clear conscience.
 - a. *[Acts 17.31]- Because he hath appointed a day, in the which he will judge the world in righteousness by that man whom he hath ordained; whereof he hath given assurance unto all men, in that he hath raised him from the dead.*
 - b. *[Acts 14.16]- Who in times past suffered all nations to walk in their own ways.*
 - c. *[1 John 3.21]- Beloved, if our heart condemn us not, then have we confidence toward God.*
 3. If you would stand acquitted at the last day, trade your talents for God's glory.
 - a. *[Matthew 25.21]- His lord said unto him, Well done, thou good and faithful servant: thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord.*
 4. If you would stand acquitted at the Day of Judgment, give a sincere love to the saints.
 - a. *[1 John 3.14]- We know that we have passed from death unto life, because we love the brethren. He that loveth not his brother abideth in death.*